

M  
153



A N

E X T R A C T

O F T H E

L I F E

O F T H E L A T E

Rev. Mr. DAVID BRAINERD,

*Missionary to the Indians.*

B Y

J O H N W E S L E Y, M. A.



B R I S T O L:

Printed by WILLIAM PINE, in WINE-STREET.

---

---

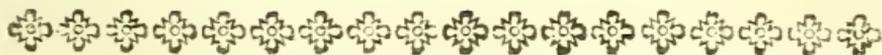
M.DCC.LXVIII.

RBR  
E  
12mo  
#5714



## ADVERTISEMENT.

**T**HOSE parts of the following history that are included between brackets thus [ ], are the words of the publisher Mr. Jonathan Edwards, minister of Northampton in New-England, for the most part summarily representing the chief things contained in Mr. Brainerd's diary: the rest is the account that he gives of himself in his private writings, in his own words.





A N

E X T R A C T

O F T H E

L I F E

O F T H E L A T E

Rev. Mr. DAVID BRAINERD.



P A R T I.

*From his Birth, to the time when he began to devote himself  
to the Study of Divinity.*

[**M**R. David Brainerd was born April 20, 1718, at Haddam, a town belonging to the county of Hartford, in the colony of Connecticut, New-England. His father, who died when he was about nine years of age, was the Worshipful Hezekiah Brainerd, Esq. one of his Majesty's council for that colony, and the son of Daniel Brainerd, Esq. a justice of the peace, and a deacon of the church in Haddam. His mother was Mrs. Dorothy Hobart, daughter to the Rev. Mr. Jeremiah Hobart, who preached awhile at Topsfield, and then removed to Hempstead on Long-island, and afterwards came and settled in the work of the ministry at Haddam; where he died in the 85th year of his age: of whom it is remarkable, that he went to the public worship

in the forenoon, and died in his chair between meetings.

Mr. David Brainerd was the third son of his parents. They had five sons and four daughters. Their eldest son is Hezekiah Brainerd, Esq. a justice of the peace, and for several years past a representative of the town of Haddam, in the general assembly of Connecticut colony; the second was the Reverend Nehemiah Brainerd, a worthy minister at Eastbury in Connecticut, who died of a Consumption Nov. 10, 1742; the fourth is Mr. John Brainerd, who succeeds his brother David, as missionary to the Indians, and pastor of the same church of Christian Indians in New Jersey; and the fifth was Israel, late student at Yale-college in New-Haven, who died since his brother David.—Mrs. Dorothy Brainerd having lived several years a widow, died when her son David was about fourteen years of age: so that in his youth he was left both fatherless and motherless. What account he has given of himself, and his own life, may be seen in what follows.]

I Was, I think, from my youth something sober, and inclined to melancholy, but do not remember any conviction of sin, worthy of remark, 'till I was seven or eight years of age; when I grew terrified at the thoughts of death, and was driven to the performance of duties: this religious concern was short-lived. However, I sometimes attended secret prayer; and thus lived at "ease in Zion, tho' without God in the world," 'till I was above thirteen years of age. But in the winter 1732, I was something roused by the prevailing of a mortal sickness in Haddam. I was frequent, constant, and something fervent in duties, and took delight in reading, especially Mr. Janeway's *Token for Children*; I was sometimes much melted in duties, and took great delight in the performance of them. The Spirit of God at this time proceeded far with me; I was remarkably dead to the world, and my thoughts were almost wholly employed about my soul's concerns; I may indeed say,

"Almost"

“Almost I was persuaded to be a Christian.” I was also exceedingly distressed at the death of my mother, in March, 1732. But afterwards my religious concern declined, and I by degrees fell back into security, though I still attended to secret prayer.

About the 15th of April 1733, I removed from my father’s house to East-Haddam, where I spent four years. Here I went to a round of secret duty. I was not much addicted to young company: but when I did go into it, I never returned with so good a conscience as I went; it always added new guilt to me, and made me afraid to come to the throne of grace.

About the latter end of April 1737, being full nineteen, I removed to Durham, and began to work on my farm, and so continued till I was twenty years old; tho’ frequently longing after a liberal education. When I was about twenty, I applied myself to study, and was engaged more than ever in the duties of religion. I became very watchful over my thoughts, words, and actions; and thought I must be so, because I designed to devote myself to the ministry.

Some time in April 1738, I went to Mr. Fiske’s, and lived with him during his life\*. And I remember, he advised me wholly to abandon young company, and associate myself with grave elderly people: which counsel I followed; and my manner of life was now exceeding regular. I read my Bible more than twice through in less than a year, I spent much time every day in secret prayer, and other secret duties; I gave great attention to the word preached, and endeavoured to my utmost to retain it. So much concerned was I about religion, that I agreed with some young persons to meet privately on Sabbath-evenings for religious exercises; and after our meeting was ended, I used to repeat the discourses of the day to myself, and recollect what I could, though sometimes it was late in the night. Again, on Monday mornings I used sometimes to recollect the same sermons.

\* Mr. Fiske was the pastor of the church in Haddam.

fermons: And I had sometimes considerable movings or affections in duties, and much pleasure therein.

After Mr. Fiske's death, I proceeded in my learning with my brother; and was still very constant in religious duties. Thus I proceeded on a *self-righteous* foundation;\* and should still, had not the mere mercy of God prevented.

Some time in the beginning of winter, *anno*. 1738, it pleased God, on one Sabbath-day morning, as I was walking out for some secret duties, to give me on a sudden, such a sense of my danger, and the wrath of God, that I stood amazed, and was much distressed all that day, fearing the vengeance of God would soon overtake me; I kept much alone, and sometimes grudged the birds and beasts their happiness, because they were not exposed to eternal misery, as I saw I was. And thus I lived from day to day, in great distress: sometimes there appeared mountains before me to obstruct my hopes of mercy; but I used, however, to pray and cry to God, and perform other duties with great earnestness.

Some time in February, 1738-9, I set apart a day for secret fasting and prayer, and spent the day in almost incessant cries to God for mercy, that he would open my eyes to see the evil of sin, and the way of life by Jesus Christ. And God was pleased that day to make considerable discoveries of my heart to me, and to make my endeavours a means to shew me my *helplessness* in some measure.—I constantly strove after whatever *qualifications* I imagined others obtained before the reception of Christ. Sometimes I felt the power of an *hard heart*, and supposed it must be *softened* before Christ would accept of me; and when I felt any meltings of heart, I hoped now the work was almost done; and hence, when my distress still remained, I was wont to murmur at God's dealings with me: and thought, when others felt

\* I doubt that: I believe this was True Religion as far as it went.

felt their hearts softened, God shewed them mercy ; but my distress remained still.

Sometimes I grew *remiss* and *sluggish*, without any great convictions of sin, for a considerable time together ; but after such a season, convictions seized me more violently. One night in particular, when I was walking solitarily abroad, I had such a view of my sin, that I feared the ground would cleave asunder, and send my soul quick into hell. And though I was forced to go to bed, lest my distress should be discovered by others, which I much feared ; yet I scarce durst sleep at all, for I thought it would be a great wonder if I should be out of hell in the morning. But though my distress was thus great, yet I dreaded the loss of convictions, and returning back to a state of security, and to my former insensibility of impending wrath ; which made me exceeding exact in my behaviour, lest I should stifle the motions of God's spirit.

The many disappointments and distresses I met with, put me into a most *horrible frame of contesting* with the Almighty ; with an inward vehemence, finding fault with his ways of dealing with mankind. I found great fault with the imputation of Adam's sin to his posterity ; and my wicked heart often wished for some other way of salvation, than by Jesus Christ. I wished sometimes there was no God, or that there were some other God that could controul him. These thoughts were frequently acted before I was aware ; but, when I considered this, it distressed me, to think, that my heart was so full of enmity against God ; and it made me tremble, lest God's vengeance should suddenly fall upon me. I used before, to imagine my heart was not so bad, as the scriptures represented. Sometimes I used to take much pains to work it into an humble submissive disposition ; but on a sudden, the thoughts of the strictness of the law, or the sovereignty of God, would so irritate the corruption of my heart, that it would break over all bounds, and burst forth on all sides, like floods of waters when they break down their damm.

While

While I was in this distressed state of mind, the *corruption* of my heart was especially *irritated* with these things following.

1. The *strictness* of the divine law. For I found it was impossible for me (after my utmost pains) to answer the demands of it. I often made resolutions, and as often broke them. I imputed the whole to want of being more watchful, and used to call myself a fool for my negligence. But when, upon a stronger resolution, and greater endeavours, fasting and prayer, I found all attempts fail, then I quarrelled with the law of God, as unreasonably rigid. I thought, if it extended only to my outward actions, I could bear with it; but I found it condemned me for the sins of my heart, which I could not possibly prevent. I was extremely loath to give out, and own my utter helplessness; but after repeated disappointments, thought that, rather than perish, I could do a little more still, especially if such and such circumstances might but attend my endeavours; I hoped, that I should strive more earnestly than ever: and this hope of future more favourable circumstances, and of doing something hereafter, kept me from utter despair of myself, and from seeing myself fallen into the hands of God, and dependent on nothing but boundless grace.

2. Another thing was, that *faith alone* was the *condition of salvation*; and that God would not come down to lower terms, that he would not promise life and salvation upon my sincere prayers and endeavours. That word, Mark xvi. 16. "He that believeth not, shall be damned," cut off all hope there; and I found, faith was the gift of God; that I could not get it of myself, and could not oblige God to bestow it upon me, by any of my performances, (Eph, ii. 1. 8.) "This," I was ready to say, "is a hard saying, who can bear it?" I could not bear, that all I had done should stand for mere nothing, who had been very conscientious in duty, and had been exceeding religious a great while, and had (as I thought) done much more than many others that had obtained mer-

cy. I confessed indeed the vileness of my duties; but then, what made them at that time seem vile, was my wandering thoughts in them; not because I was all over defiled, and the principle corrupt from whence they flowed, so that I could not possibly do any thing that was good. And therefore I called what I did, by the name of faithful endeavours; and could not bear it, that God had made no promises of salvation to them.

3. Another thing was, that I could not find out how to come to Christ. I read the calls of Christ, made to the *weary* and *heavy laden*; but could find no way that he directed them to come in. I thought I would gladly come, if I knew *how*, though the path of duty directed to was never so difficult. Mr Stoddard's *Guide to Christ*, did not tell me any thing I could do, that would bring me to Christ, but left me as it were with a great gulph between me and Christ, without any direction to get through. For I was not yet experimentally taught, that there could be no way prescribed, whereby a natural man could, of his own strength, obtain that which is supernatural, and which the highest angel cannot give.

All this time the spirit of God was powerfully at work with me; and I was inwardly pressed to relinquish all *self-confidence*, all hopes of ever helping myself by any means whatsoever; and the conviction of my *lost* estate was sometimes so clear, that it was as if it had been declared to me in so many words, "It is done, it is for ever impossible to deliver yourself." For about three or four days, my soul was thus distressed, especially at some turns, when for a few moments I seemed to myself lost and undone; but then would shrink back immediately from the sight, because I dared not venture myself into the hands of God, as wholly helpless, I dared not see that important truth, that I was *dead in trespasses and sins*. But when I had thrust away these views of myself at any time, I was distressed to have the same discoveries again; for I greatly feared being given over of God to final stupidity. When I thought of putting it off

to a *more convenient season*, the conviction was so powerful with regard to the present time, that it was the best time, and probably the only time, that I dared not to put it off. It was the sight of *truth*, concerning myself, *truth* respecting my state, as a creature fallen and alienated from God, and that consequently could make no demands on God for mercy, my soul shrink away from, I could see no safety in owning myself in the hands of God, and that I could lay no claim to any thing better than damnation.

But after a considerable time spent in such distresses, one morning, while I was walking in a solitary place, as usual, I at once saw that all my contrivances to procure salvation for myself, were utterly *in vain*: I was brought quite to a stand as finding myself totally *lost*. I had thought many times, that the difficulties were very great; but now I saw, in very different light, that it was for ever impossible for me to do any thing towards delivering myself. I then thought of blaming myself, that I had not done 'more, while I had opportunity; (for it seemed now as if the season of doing was for ever over and gone;) but I instantly saw, that let me have done what I would, it would no more have tended to my helping myself, than what I had done; that I had made all the pleas I ever could have made to all eternity; and that all my pleas were vain. The *tumult* that had been before in my mind, was now *quieted*; and I was something eased of that distress, which I felt, while struggling against a fight of myself. I had the greatest certainty that my state was for ever miserable, for all that I could do: and was almost astonished that I had never been sensible of it before.

In the time while I remained in this state, my *notions* respecting my *duties*, were quite different from what I had ever entertained in times past. Now I saw, there was no necessary connection between my prayers and the divine mercy: that they laid not the least obligation upon God to bestow his grace upon me; and that there was no more goodness in them, than there would be in my paddling with my hand

in the water, (which was the comparifon I had then in my mind); and this becaufe they were not performed from any love to God. I faw that I had heaped up my devotions before God, fafting, praying, &c. really thinking I was aiming at the glory of God; whereas I never once truly intended it.

I continued in this ftate of mind from Friday morning 'till the Sabbath-evening following, July 12, 1739, when I was walking again in the fame folitary place, and attempting to pray, but found no heart to engage in that or any other duty. Having been thus endeavouring to pray for near half an hour, (and by this time the fun was about half an hour high) as I was walking in a dark thick grove, *unfpeakable glory* feemed to open to the view of my foul: I do not mean any external brightnefs, nor any imagination of a body of light, or any thing of that nature; but it was a new inward apprehenfion or view that I had of God, fuch as I never had before. I flood ftill, and admired! I knew that I had never feen before any thing comparable to it for excellency and beauty; It was widely different from all the conceptions that ever I had had of God, or things divine. I had no particular apprehenfion of any one perfon in the Trinity, either the Father, the Son, or the Holy Ghofit; but it appeared to be *divine glory*, that I then beheld: and my foul *rejoiced with joy unfpeakable*, to fee fuch a God, fuch a glorious divine being; and I was inwardly pleafed and fatisfied, that he fhould be *God over all* for ever and ever. My foul was fo captivated and delighted with the excellency, lovelinefs, greatnefs, and other perfections of God, that I was even fwallowed up in him, to that degree, that at *firft*, I fcarce reflected there was fuch a creature as myfelf.

Thus God, I truft, brought me to a hearty difpofition to *exalt him*, and fet him on the throne, and ultimately to aim at his honour and glory, as king of univerfe.

I continued in this ftate 'till near dark, without any fenfible abatement; and then began to think what I

had seen; and was sweetly *composed* all the evening following. I felt myself in a new world, and every thing about me appeared with a different aspect from what it was wont to do.

At this time the *way of salvation* opened to me with such infinite wisdom, suitableness, and excellency, that I wondered I should ever think of any other way of salvation; was amazed, that I had not dropped my own contrivances, and complied with this blessed and excellent way before. If I could have been saved by my own duties, or any other way that I had formerly contrived, my whole soul would now have refused. I wondered, that the whole world did not see and comply with this way of salvation, entirely by the *merits of Christ*.

The sweet relish of what I then felt, continued with me for several days, in a greater or less degree; I could not but sweetly rejoice in God, lying down and rising up. The next Lord's day I felt something of the same kind, though not so powerful. But, not long after, was again under great distress; yet not of the same kind with my distress under convictions. I was guilty, afraid, and ashamed to come before God; was exceedingly pressed with a sense of guilt: but it was not long before I felt (I trust) true repentance and joy in God.

In the beginning of September I went to college,\* and entered there; but with some degree of reluctance, fearing lest I should not be able to lead a life of strict religion, in the midst of so many temptations.—After this, before I went to tarry at college, it pleased God to visit my soul with clearer manifestations of himself. I was spending some time in prayer, and self-examination; and the Lord by his grace so shined into my heart, that I enjoyed full assurance of his favour; and my soul was unspeakably refreshed. At this time especially, as well as some others, fundry passages of God's word opened to my soul with divine clearness, power and sweetness,

\* Yale-College in New-Haven.

ness, so as to appear exceeding precious, and with clear and certain evidence of its being *the word of God*. I enjoyed considerable sweetness in religion all the winter following.

In Jan. 1739—40, the measles spread much in college; and I having taken the distemper, went home to Haddam. But some days before I was taken sick, my soul mourned the absence of the Comforter: it seemed to me, all comfort was gone; I cried to God, yet found no relief. But a night or two before I was taken ill, while I was walking alone and engaged in meditation and prayer, I enjoyed a sweet refreshing visit from above, so that my soul was raised far above the fears of death; O how much more refreshing this one season was, than all the pleasures that earth can afford! After a day or two I was taken with the measles, and almost despaired of life; but had no distressing fears of death. However, I soon recovered: yet, by reason of hard studies, I had little time for spiritual duties; my soul often mourned for want of more time and opportunity to be alone with God. In the spring and summer following, I had better advantages for retirement, and enjoyed more comfort: though indeed my ambition in my studies greatly wronged the vigour of my spiritual life: yet “in the multitude of my thoughts within me, God’s comforts delighted my soul.”

One day in particular, (in June 1740) I walked in the fields alone, and found such unspeakable sweetness in God, that I thought, if I must continue still in this evil world, I wanted always to be there to behold God’s glory: my soul dearly loved all mankind, and longed exceedingly that they should enjoy what I enjoyed.—It seemed to be a little resemblance of heaven.

In August following, I became so disordered, by too close application to my studies, that I was advised by my tutor to go home, and disengage my mind from study, as much as I could; for I began to spit blood. I took his advice, but being brought very low, I looked death in the face more steadfastly;—the Lord

was pleased to give me a sweet relish of divine things, and my soul took delight in the blessed God.

Saturday, October 18. In my morning devotions, my soul was exceedingly melted for, and bitterly mourned over my exceeding *sinfulness* and *vileness*. I never before felt so deep a sense of the odious nature of sin. My soul was then unusually carried forth in love to God, and had a lively sense of God's love to me. And this love and hope, cast out fear.

October 19. In the morning I felt my soul *hungering and thirsting after righteousness*. In the forenoon, while I was looking on the sacramental elements, and thinking that Jesus Christ would soon be "set forth crucified before me," my soul was filled with light and love, so that I was almost in an ecstasy; my body was so weak, I could scarcely stand. I felt at the same time an exceeding tenderness and most fervent love towards all mankind; so that my soul and all the powers of it seemed, as it were, to melt into softness and sweetness. This love and joy cast out fear; and my soul longed for perfect grace and glory.

Tuesday, October 21. I had likewise experience of the goodness of God in "shedding abroad his love in my heart," and all the remaining part of the week, my soul was taken up with divine things. I now so longed after God, and *to be freed from sin*, that when I felt myself recovering, and thought I must return to college again, which had proved so hurtful to me the year past, I could not but be grieved, and I thought I had much rather have died; but before I went, I enjoyed several other sweet and precious seasons of communion with God, wherein my soul enjoyed unspeakable comfort.

I returned to college about November 6, and through the goodness of God, felt the power of religion almost daily.

November 28. I enjoyed precious discoveries of God, and was unspeakably refreshed with that passage, Heb. xii. 22, 23, 24, so that my soul longed to wing away for the paradise of God; I longed to be conformed to God in all things.

Tuesday,

Tuesday, December 9. God was pleased wonderfully to assist and strengthen me; so that I thought nothing should ever move me from the love of God in Christ Jesus my Lord.—O ! *one hour with God* infinitely exceeds all the pleasures of this lower world.

Towards the latter end of January, 1740-41. I grew more *cold* and *dull* in matters of religion, by means of my old temptation, ambition in my studies.—But through divine goodness, a great and general *awakening* spread itself over the college, about the latter end of February, in which I was much quickened, and more abundantly engaged in religion.

[This awakening here spoken of, was at the beginning of that extraordinary religious commotion through the land, which is fresh in every one's memory. This awakening was for a time very great and general at New-Haven; and the college had no small share in it: that society was greatly reformed, the students in general became serious, and many of them remarkably so, and much engaged in the concerns of their eternal salvation.

It could not be otherwise than that one whose heart had been so drawn to God, should be mightily enlarged, animated, and engaged at the sight of such an alteration made in the college, the town, and land; and so great an appearance of mens reforming their lives, and turning from their profaneness and immorality, to seriousness and concern for their salvation, and of religion's reviving and flourishing almost every where. But as an intemperate zeal, soon mingled itself with that revival of religion: So Mr. Brainerd had the unhappiness to have a tincture of it. One instance of which it is necessary should be related, with its circumstances.

In the time of the awakening at college, several students associated themselves, who were wont freely to open themselves one to another: Mr. Brainerd was one of this company. And it once happened, that he and two or three more of these his intimate friends were in the hall together, after Mr. Whittelsey, one of the tutors, had been to prayer there

with the scholars; no other person now remaining in the hall, but Mr. Brainerd and these his companions. Mr. Whittelsey having been unusually pathetic in his prayer, one of Brainerd's friends asked him what he thought of Mr. Whittelsey; he made answer, "He has no more grace than this chair." One happening at that time to be near the hall overheard those words, though he heard no name mentioned, and knew not who the person was, which was thus censured: he informed a certain woman who went and informed the rector, who sent for the man and examined him; and he told the rector the words that he heard Brainerd utter, and informed him who were in the room with him at that time. Upon which the rector sent for them; they were very backward to inform against their friend, of that which they looked upon as private conversation, yet the rector compelled them to declare what he said, and of whom he said it.—Brainerd thought, that what he said in private, was injuriously extorted from his friends, and that it was injuriously required of him to make a public confession, before the whole college in the hall, for what he had said only in private conversation.—He not complying with this demand, and having gone once to the separate meeting at New-haven, when forbidden by the rector, and also having been accused of saying concerning the rector, that he wondered he did not expect to drop down dead for fining the scholars who followed Mr. Tennent to Milford, though there was no proof of it, (and Mr. Brainerd ever professed that he did not remember his saying any thing to that purpose;) he was expelled the college.

The reader will see, in the sequel of Mr. Brainerd's life,\* what his own thoughts afterwards were of his behaviour in these things, and in how Christian a manner he conducted himself, with respect to this affair: though he ever, as long as he lived, supposed himself

\* Particularly under the date, Wednesday, Sept. 14, 1743.

himself much abused, in the management of it, and in what he suffered in it.

His expulsion was in the winter *anno* 1741-2, while he was in his third year in college.]

## P A R T II.

*From the time that he began to devote himself to the study of divinity, till he was examined and licensed to preach.*

[**M**R. Brainerd, the spring after his expulsion<sup>d</sup> went to live with the Reverend Mr. Mills, of Ripton, to follow his studies with him, in order to his being fitted for the work of the ministry; where he spent the greater part of the time till the association licensed him to preach.]—The following account is in his own words.

Thursday, April 1, 1742. I seem to be declining with respect to my life and warmth in divine things; O that God would humble me deeply in the dust! I deserve hell every day, for not loving my Lord more, “who has loved me, and given himself for me;” and every time I am enabled to exercise any grace, I am indebted to the God of all grace for special assistance. “Where then is boasting?” Surely “it is excluded,” since we depend on God for the being and every act of grace.

Friday, April 2. In the afternoon I felt myself, in secret prayer, much resigned, calm, and serene. What are all the storms of this lower world, if *Jesus* by his spirit does but come *walking on the seas*!—Some time past, I had much pleasure in the prospect of the heathen’s being brought home to Christ, and desired that the Lord would employ *me* in that work;—but now my soul more frequently desires to die, *to be with Christ*. O that my soul were wrapt up in love, and my longing after God increased!

Saturday, April 3. I had an ill night last night. I thought, if God would take me to himself, my soul would

would exceedingly rejoice. O that I may be always humble and resigned to God, and that God would cause my soul to be more fixed on himself, that I may be more fitted both for doing and suffering!

Lord's day, April 4. O my blessed God! Let me climb up near to him, and love, and long, and plead, and wrestle, and reach, and stretch after him, and for deliverance from the body of sin and death.—Alas! my soul mourned to think I should ever lose sight of its beloved again. “O come, Lord Jesus, Amen.”

Tuesday, April 6. I cried to God to wash my soul, and cleanse me from my exceeding filthiness.—And I could think of undergoing the greatest sufferings, with pleasure; and found myself willing (if God should so order it) to suffer banishment from my native land, among the heathen, that I might do something for their salvation, in distresses and deaths of any kind.—Then God gave me to wrestle earnestly for others, for the kingdom of Christ in the world, and for my dear Christian friends.—I felt myself weaned from the world, and from my own reputation, willing to be despised, and to be a gazing-stock for the world.—It is impossible for me to express what I then felt: I had not much joy, but a sense of the majesty of God, which made me tremble; I saw myself mean and vile, which made me more willing that God should do what he would with me; it was all infinitely reasonable.

Wednesday, April 7. I had not so much fervency in prayer.—At noon I spent some time in secret, with fervency, but scarce any sweetness.

Thursday, April 8. I had hopes respecting the heathen. O that God would bring in numbers of them to Christ! I cannot but hope I shall see that glorious day.—Every thing in this world seems exceeding vile and little to me: I look so to myself.

Saturday, April 10. I spent much time in secret prayer this morning, and not without some comfort: but am so low, and feel so little of the sensible presence of God, that I hardly know what to call faith,  
and

and am made to "possess the sins of my youth," and the dreadful sin of my nature, and am all sin; I cannot think, nor act, but every motion is sin.— Yet I feel some faint hopes, that God will, of his infinite mercy, return.

Lord's day, April 11. Afterwards I had sweetness in the thoughts of arriving at the heavenly world. O for the happy day!—After public worship God gave me special assistance in prayer; I wrestled with my dear Lord, with much sweetness; and intercession was a sweet and delightful employment to me.—In the evening, as I was viewing the light in the north, I was delighted in contemplation on the glorious morning of the resurrection.

Monday, April 12. This morning the Lord was pleased to lift up the light of his countenance upon me in secret prayer, and made the season very precious to my soul. I felt myself exceeding calm, and quite resigned to God, respecting my future employment, *when* and *where* he pleased; my faith lifted me above the world, and removed all those mountains, that I could not look over of late: I wanted not the favour of men to lean upon; for I knew Christ's favour was infinitely better, and that it was no matter *when*, nor *where*, nor *how* Christ should send me, nor what trials he should still exercise me with, if I might be prepared for his work and will. I now found sweetly revived in my mind the wonderful discovery of infinite wisdom in all the dispensations of God towards me, which I had a little before I met with my great trial at college; every thing appeared full of the wisdom of God.

Wednesday, April 14. My soul longed for communion with Christ, and for the mortification of indwelling corruption, especially spiritual pride. O there is a sweet day coming, wherein "the weary will be at rest!" My soul has enjoyed much sweetness this day in the hopes of its speedy arrival.

Thursday, April 15. My desires centered in God, and I found a sensible attraction of soul after him: *I long for God*, and a conformity to his will, in inward,

ward holiness, ten thousand times more than for any thing here below.

Lord's day, April 18. I retired early this morning into the woods for prayer; and was enabled to plead with fervency for the advancement of Christ's kingdom.—At night I saw myself infinitely indebted to God, and had a view of my short-comings: it seemed to me, that I had done nothing for God, and that I had *lived to him* but a few hours of my life.

Monday, April 19. I set apart this day for fasting and prayer to God for his grace, to prepare me for the work of the ministry, and in his own time to send me into his harvest." I felt a power of intercession for the advancement of the kingdom of my dear Lord; and withal, a sweet resignation, and even joy in the thoughts of suffering hardships, distresses, yea, death itself, in the promotion of it. In the afternoon, "God was with me of a truth." O it was blessed company indeed! God enabled me so to agonize in prayer, that I was quite wet with sweat, though in the shade, and the wind cool. My soul was drawn out very much for the world; I grasped for multitudes of souls. I had more enlargement for sinners, than for the children of God; though I felt as if I could spend my life in cries for both. I never felt such an entire weanedness from this world, and so much resigned to God in every thing.—O that I may always live *to* and *upon* my blessed God!

Tuesday, April 20. This day I am twenty-four years of age. O how much mercy have I received the year past! How often has God "caused his goodness to pass before me!" And how poorly have I answered the vows I made this time twelvemonth, to be wholly the Lord's, to be for ever devoted to his service! The Lord, help me to live more to his glory.—This has been a sweet day to me: blessed be God. I think my soul was never so drawn out in intercession for *others*. I had a fervent wrestle with the Lord for my *enemies*; and I hadly ever so longed to *live to God*, and to be altogether devoted to him.

Lord's day, April 25. This morning I spent about

two hours in secret, and was enabled more than ordinarily to agonize for immortal souls; though it was early in the morning, and the sun scarcely shined at all, yet my body was quite wet with sweat. I felt myself much pressed, as frequently of late, to plead for the meekness and calmness of the Lamb of God. O it is a sweet disposition, heartily to forgive all injuries, to wish our greatest enemies as well as we do our own souls! Blessed Jesus, may I daily be more and more conformed to thee! At night I was exceedingly melted with divine love, and had a sense of the blessedness of the upper world. Those words hung upon me, with much sweetness, Psal. lxxxiv. 7. "They go from strength to strength, every one of them in Zion appeareth before God." O the *near access* that God sometimes gives us in our addresses to him! This may well be termed *appearing before God*; it is so indeed, in the true spiritual sense, I have not had such power of intercession these many months, both for God's children, and for dead sinners. I longed for the coming of my dear Lord: I longed to join the angelic hosts in praises, wholly free from imperfection. O the blessed moment hastens! All I want is to be more holy, more like my dear Lord. O for sanctification! My very soul pants for the complete restoration of the blessed image of my Saviour; that I may be fit for the blessed enjoyments and employments of the heavenly world.

Monday, April 26. I continued in a sweet frame of mind; but in the afternoon felt something of spiritual pride. God was pleased to make it a humbling season. My soul exceedingly longs for that blessed state of perfection, of deliverance from all sin! — At night, God enabled me to give my soul up to him, to cast myself upon him, to be ordered and disposed of according to his sovereign pleasure; and I enjoyed great peace and consolation in so doing. My soul took sweet delight in God: my thoughts freely and sweetly centered in him. O that I could spend every moment of my life to his glory!

Tuesday, April 27. I retired for secret devotions; and

and God was pleased to pour such ineffable comfort into my soul, that I could do nothing for some time but say over and over, " O my sweet Saviour! O my sweet Saviour! whom have I in heaven but thee! And there is none upon earth, that I desire beside thee," If I had had a thousand lives, my soul would gladly have laid them all down at once to have been with Christ. My soul never enjoyed so much of heaven before; it was the most refined communion with God I ever felt: I never before felt so great a degree of resignation.—In the afternoon I withdrew to meet with my God, but found myself much declined. I mourned over *the body of death* that is in me: it grieved me exceedingly, that I could not pray to and praise God with my heart full of love.—O that my soul might never offer any dead cold services to my God!

Wednesday, April 28. I withdrew to my usual place of retirement, and spent about two hours in secret. I felt much as I did yesterday-morning, only weaker and more overcome. I seemed to hang wholly on my dear Lord; wholly weaned from all other dependencies. I knew not what to say to my God, but only *lean on his bosom*, as it were, and breathe out my desires after a perfect conformity to him in all things. Thirsting desires, and insatiable longings, possessed my soul after perfect holiness: God was so precious to my soul, that the world with all its enjoyments was infinitely vile: I had no more value for the favour of men, than for pebbles: The Lord was my all; and *he* over-ruled all; which greatly delighted me. I think, my faith and dependence on God scarce ever rose so high. I saw him such a fountain of goodness, that it seemed impossible I should distrust him again, or be any way anxious about any thing that should happen to me.—In the evening my heart seemed sweetly to melt, and, was humbled for indwelling corruption, and I "mourned like a dove." I felt that all my unhappiness arose from my being a sinner; for with resignation I could bid welcome all other trials; but in  
hung

being heavy upon me: for God discovered to me the corruption of my heart; so that I went to bed with a heavy heart, because I was a sinner: though I did not in the least doubt of God's love. O that God would "purge away all my dross, and take away my tin."

Friday, April 30. Nothing grieves me so much, as that I cannot live constantly to God's glory. I could bear any spiritual conflicts, if I could but have *my heart* all the while *burning within me* with love to God; but this is impossible; for when I *feel* this I cannot be dejected, but only *rejoice in my Saviour*, who has delivered me from the reigning power, and will shortly deliver me from the indwelling of sin.

Lord's day, May 2. God was pleased this morning to give me such a sight of myself, as made me appear very vile in my own eyes: I felt corruption stirring in my heart, which I could by no means suppress: I was exceeding weak, and almost sick with my inward trials.

Monday, May 3. I spent the day in fasting and prayer: God gave me much power of wrestling for his cause and kingdom: God was with me all the day, and I was more above the world; than ever in my life.

Lord's day, May 9. I never felt so much of the cursed pride of my heart, as well as the stubbornness of my will before. O what a wretch I am! I could not submit to be nothing, and to lie down in the dust. Oh that God would humble me! I felt myself such a sinner, all day, that I had scarce any comfort. Oh when shall I be "delivered from the body of this death!" I greatly feared, lest through stupidity I should lose the benefit of these trials. O that they might be sanctified to my soul! Nothing seemed to touch me but this, that I was a sinner.

Thursday, May 13. I saw so much of the wickedness of my heart, that I longed to get away from myself. I never before thought there was so much spiritual pride in my soul: I was almost pressed to death with my vileness. Oh what a *body of death* is there in me! *Lord, deliver my soul.* O the closest walk with

God is the sweetest heaven that can be enjoyed on earth !

Friday, May 14. I waited on a council of ministers, and spread before them the treatment I had met with from the rector and tutors of Yale college ; who thought it adviseable to intercede for me with the rector and trustees, and to intreat them to restore me to my former privileges in college.\*

Saturday, June 12. I spent much time in prayer this morning, and enjoyed much sweetness :— Felt insatiable longings after God : I wondered how poor souls do to live, that have *no God*.—The world, with all its enjoyments, quite vanished. I see myself very helpless : but I have a blessed God to go to. I longed exceedingly “ to be dissolved, and to be with Christ, to behold his glory.” Oh, my weak weary soul longs to arrive at *my Father’s house* !

Monday, June 14. I felt something of the sweetness of communion with God, and the *constraining* force of *his love* :—I set apart this day for fasting and prayer, to intreat God to bless me with regard to the great work of *preaching the gospel* ; and that the Lord would return to me, “ and shew me the light of his countenance.” Just at night, the Lord visited me marvellously in prayer : I think my soul never was in such an agony before : I felt no restraint ; for the treasures of divine grace were opened to me : I wrestled for my absent friends, for the ingathering of souls, for multitudes of poor souls, and for many that I thought were the children of God, personally, in many distant places. I was in such an agony, till near dark, that I was all over wet with sweat : but yet it seemed to me that I had wasted away the day, and had done nothing. Oh, my dear Jesus did *sweat blood* for poor souls !— I longed for more compassion towards them.

Tuesday,

\* *The application which was then made on his behalf, had not the desired success.*

Tuesday, June 15. I had the most ardent longings after God, that ever I felt in my life: at noon, in secret, I could do nothing but tell my dear Lord, that he knew I longed for nothing but *himself*, nothing but *holiness*; that *he* had given me these desires, and he *only* could give me the thing desired. I never seemed to be so unhinged from myself, and to be so wholly devoted to God. My heart was swallowed up in God most of the day. In the evening I had such a view of the soul's being as it were enlarged, to contain more holiness, that my soul seemed ready to separate from my body, to obtain it. I then wrestled in an agony for divine blessings; had my heart drawn out in prayer for some Christian friends, beyond what I ever had before.—I feel differently now from what ever I did under any sweet enjoyments before, more engaged to *live to God* for ever. Oh how short do I fall of my duty in my sweetest moments!

Friday, June 18. Considering my great unfitness for the *ministry*, and total inability to do any thing for the glory of God that way. I set apart this day for prayer to God, and found God graciously near; once in particular, while I was pleading for more compassion for immortal souls, my *heart* seemed to be *opened* at once, and I was enabled to cry with great ardency.

Oh, I was distressed; to think, that I should offer such dead cold services to the *living God*! My soul seemed to breathe after holiness, a life of constant devotedness to God. But I am almost lost sometimes in the pursuit of this blessedness, and ready to sink, because I continually fall short. O that the Lord would help me to hold out, yet a little while, till the happy hour of deliverance comes!

Lord's day, June 20. Spent much time alone. My soul longed to be holy, and reached after God; I *hungered* and *thirsted*; but was not satisfied. My soul hung on God, as my only portion. O that I could grow in grace more abundantly every day!

Tuesday, June 22. I was sweetly composed and resigned to God's will; was enabled to leave myself

and all my concerns with him, and to have my whole dependence upon him: my secret retirement was very refreshing; it appeared such a happiness to have God for my portion, that I had rather be any other creature in this lower creation, than not come to the enjoyment of God: I had rather be a beast, than a man, without God, if I were to live here to eternity. Lord, endear thyself more to me!

Wednesday, June 30, Spent this day alone in the woods, in fasting and prayer; underwent the most dreadful conflicts in my soul, that ever I felt; I saw myself so vile, that I was ready to say, "I shall now perish by the hand of Saul." I almost concluded, I had no power to stand for the cause of God, but was "afraid of the shaking of a leaf." Spent almost the whole day in prayer, incessantly. I could not bear to think of Christians shewing me any respect. I almost despaired of doing any service in the world; I could not feel any hope respecting the heathen, which used to afford me some refreshment in the darkest hours. I spent the day *in the bitterness of my soul*. Near night I enjoyed some sweetness in prayer.

Saturday, July 3. My heart seemed again to sink. The disgrace I was laid under at college, seemed to damp me, as it opens the mouths of opposers. I had no refuge but in God. Blessed be his name, that I may go to *him* at all times, and find him a *present help*.

Lord's day, July 4. In the evening I withdrew, and enjoyed a happy season in secret: God was pleased to give me the exercise of faith, and thereby brought the invisible and eternal world near to my soul. I hoped, that my weary *pilgrimage* would be *short*; that it would not be long before I was brought to my Father's house: but I was sweetly resigned to God's will, to tarry his time, to do his work, and suffer his pleasure. I felt pleased, to be *little*, to be *nothing*, and to *lie in the dust*. I enjoyed life and sweet consolation in pleading for the dear children of God, and the kingdom of Christ in the world: and my soul earnestly breathed after holiness, and the enjoyment

ment of God. "O come, Lord Jesus ! come quickly. Amen,"

Monday, July 19. My desires seem especially to be carried out after weanedness from the *world*, perfect deadness to it, and to be even *crucified* to all its allurements. My soul longs to feel itself more of a *pilgrim* and *stranger* here below ; that nothing may divert me from pressing through the lonely desert, till I arrive at my Father's house.

Thursday, July 22. Journeying from Southbury to Ripton, I called at a house, where being kindly entertained, I was filled with amazement and shame, that God should stir up the hearts of any to shew so much kindness to such a *dead dog* as I ; and was sensible, how exceeding vile it is, not to be wholly devoted to God. I wondered, that God would suffer any of his creatures to feed and sustain me from time to time.

Thursday, July 29, I was examined by the Association met at Danbury, as to my learning, and experiences in religion, and received a licence from them to preach the gospel of Christ. Afterwards I felt much devoted to God ; joined in prayer with one of the ministers ; and went to bed resolving to live devoted to God all my days.

### P A R T III.

*From the time of his being licensed to preach, till he was examined in New-York, and appointed Missionary to the Indians.*

FRIDAY, July 30, 1742. I rode from Danbury to Southbury ; preached there from 1 Pet. iv. 6. I had much of the comfortable presence of God in the exercise : I seemed to have power with God in prayer, and power to get hold of the hearts of the people,

Lord's day, August 8. In the morning I felt comfortably in secret prayer; my soul was refreshed with the hopes of the Heathen's coming to Christ; I was much resigned to God, and thought it was no matter what became of *me*.

Thursday, August 12. This morning I was exercised with sore inward trials: I had no power to pray; but seemed shut out from God. I had in a great measure lost my hopes of God's sending me among the heathen, and of seeing them flock to Christ. I saw so much of my hellish vileness, that I appeared worse to myself than any devil: I wondered that God would let me live, and wondered that people did not stone me, much more that they would ever hear me preach! It seemed as though I neither could nor should preach any more: yet about nine or ten o'clock, the people came, and I was forced to preach. And blessed be God, he gave me his presence and spirit: so that I spoke with power from Job xiv. 14. Some Indians cried out in great distress,\* and all appeared greatly concerned. After we had prayed and exhorted them to seek the Lord with constancy, and hired an English woman to keep a kind of *school* among them, we came away about one o'clock, and came to Judea, about fifteen or sixteen miles. There God was pleased to visit my soul with much comfort. Blessed be the Lord for all things I meet with.

Tuesday, August 17. I was exceedingly depressed in spirit; it cuts and wounds my heart, to think how much *self-exaltation, spiritual pride, and warmth of temper*, I have *formerly* intermingled with my endeavours to promote God's work: and sometimes I long to lie down at the feet of opposers, and confess what a poor creature I have been, and still am. Oh, the Lord forgive me, and make me for the future, "wise as a serpent, and harmless as a dove!"

Thursday, August 19. This day, being about to go from Mr. Bellamy's at Bethlehem, where I had resided some time, I prayed with him, and two or  
three

\* It was in a place near Kent, in the western borders of Connecticut, where there is a number of Indians.

three other Christian friends, and we gave ourselves to God with all our hearts, to be his for ever: eternity looked very near to me. If I never see them again in this world, it seemed but a few moments before I should meet them in another.

Friday, August 20. I appeared so vile to myself, that I hardly dared to think of being seen, especially on account of spiritual pride. However, to-night I enjoyed a sweet hour alone with God, (at Ripton :) I was lifted above the frowns and flatteries of this world, had a sweet relish of heavenly joys, and my soul did as it were get into the eternal world, and really taste of heaven.

Monday, August 23. I had a sweet season in secret prayer: the Lord drew near to my soul, and filled me with peace and consolation. My soul tasted the sweetness of the upper world: and was drawn out in prayer for the world, that it might come to Christ!

Monday, August 30. I prayed with a Christian friend or two; and, I think, scarce ever launched so far into the eternal world; I got so far out on the broad ocean, that my soul triumphed over all the evils on the shores of mortality.—Time, and all its gay amusements and cruel disappointments, never appeared so inconsiderable to me before; I saw myself nothing, and my soul reached after God with intense desire. I knew, I had never lived a moment to him, as I should do: indeed it appeared to me, I had never done any thing in Christianity; my soul longed with a vehement desire to *live to God*.

Thursday, September 2. I preached from John vi. 67. and God assisted me; more especially in my first prayer; my soul seemed then to launch quite into the eternal world, and to be separated from this.—Afterwards I preached again from Isa. v. 4. God gave me some assistance; but I saw myself a poor worm.

Saturday, September 4. God enabled me to wrestle ardently for the Redeemer's kingdom; and for my dear brother John, that God would make  
him

him more of a pilgrim and stranger on the earth, and fit him for singular serviceableness in the world; and my heart sweetly exulted in the Lord, in the thoughts of any distresses that might alight on him or me, in the advancement of Christ's kingdom.

Wednesday, September 8. I felt exceedingly weaned from the world.—In the afternoon I discoursed on divine things with a Christian friend, whereby we were both refreshed. Then I prayed, with a sweet sense of the blessedness of communion with God; I think I scarce ever enjoyed more of God in any one prayer. I knew not that ever I saw so much of my own nothingness in my life; never wondered so, that God allowed me to preach his word; never was so astonished as now.

Friday, September 10. I longed with intense desire after God; my whole soul seemed impatient to be conformed to him, and to become "holy, as he is holy."—in the afternoon, I prayed with a dear friend, and had the presence of God with us; our souls united together to reach after a blessed immortality, to be unclothed of the body of sin and death, and to enter the blessed world, where no unclean thing enters. O, with what intense desire did our souls long for that blessed day, that we might be freed from sin, and for ever live *to* and *in* our God!

Thursday, September 16. I enjoyed much of God in secret prayer: felt an uncommon resignation, *to be and do what God pleased*. Some days past, I felt *great perplexity* on account of my past conduct: *my bitterness*, and want of Christian kindness and love, has been *very distressing* to my soul: the Lord forgive me my *unchristian warmth*, and want of a spirit of meekness!

Saturday, September 18. I felt compassion for souls, and mourned I had no more. I feel much more kindness, meekness, gentleness, and love towards all mankind, than ever. I longed to be at the feet of my enemies and persecutors: enjoyed some  
sweetness,

sweetness, in feeling my soul conformed to Christ Jesus, and given away to him for ever.

[Through this, and the two following weeks, he passed through a variety of exercises: he was frequently dejected, and felt inward distresses: and sometimes sunk into the depths of melancholy: at which turns, he was not exercised about the state of his soul, with regard to the favour of God, but about his own sinful infirmities, and unfitness for God's service. His mind appears sometimes extremely depressed with a sense of inexpressible vileness. But in the mean time, he speaks of many seasons of comfort and spiritual refreshment.]

Lord's day, October 17. I had a sense of my helplessness; saw that I must be dependent on God for all I want; and especially when I went to the place of public worship; I found I could not speak a word for God without his special assistance: I went into the assembly trembling, as I frequently do, under a sense of my insufficiency to do any thing, as I ought to do.—But it pleased God to afford me much assistance, and there seemed to be a considerable effect on the hearers.—O that I might be “faithful to the death, fulfilling as an hireling my day,” till the shades of the evening of life shall free my soul from the toils of the day! This evening I felt such longing desires after deliverance from sin, and conformity to God, as melted my heart. Oh, I longed to be “delivered from this body of death!” to be conformed to God entirely, fully, and for ever.—I scarce ever preach without being first visited with inward conflicts and fore trials. Blessed be the Lord for these trials and distresses, as they are blessed for my humbling.

Monday, October 18. I felt some sweetness, but was still pressed through trials of soul. My life is a constant mixture of consolations and conflicts, and will be so till I arrive at the world of spirits.

Tuesday, October, 19. This morning and last night, felt a sweet longing in my soul after holiness: my soul seemed so to reach and stretch towards the

mark.

mark of perfect sanctity, that it was ready to break with longings.

Thursday, October 21. I had a very deep sense of the vanity of the world, had little more regard to it, than if I had been to go into eternity the next hour. Through divine goodness, I felt very serious and solemn. O, I love to live on the brink of eternity! This gives me a sweet, awful, and reverential sense of God and divine things, when I see myself as it were *standing before the judgment seat of Christ*.

Friday, October 22. I was uncommonly weaned from the world: my soul delighted to be a *stranger and a pilgrim on the earth*; I felt a disposition never to have any thing to do with this world: the character given of some of the antient people of God, in Heb. xi. 13. was very pleasing to me, "They confessed that they were pilgrims and strangers on the earth," and O that I could always do so!—It is sweet to be thus weaned from friends, and from myself, and dead to the world, that I may live wholly *to and upon* the blessed God.

Monday, October 26. [At Turkey-Hills] In the evening I enjoyed the divine presence: it was a sweet and comfortable season: my soul *longed for God, for the living God*: enjoyed a sweet solemnity of spirit, and longing desire after the recovery of the divine image: "Then shall I be satisfied, when I shall awake in God's likeness," and never before.

Tuesday, October 26. [At West-Suffield] I underwent the most dreadful distresses, under a sense of my own unworthiness: it seemed to me, I deserved rather to be driven out of the place, than to have any body to come to hear me preach. And verily my spirits were so depressed, that it was impossible I should treat immortal souls with faithfulness: I could not deal closely and faithfully with them, I felt so infinitely vile in myself. Oh, what *dust and ashes* I am, to think of preaching the gospel to others! Indeed I never can be faithful for one moment, but shall certainly "daub with untempered mortar," if God do not grant me special help.—In the evening,

ing, I went to the meeting-house, and it looked to me near as easy for one to rise out of the grave and preach, as for me. However, God was pleased to lift me up, and enable me to preach, O the wonderful goodness of God to so vile a sinner!

Wednesday, October 27. I was not a little concerned about preaching in the afternoon: felt exceedingly *without strength*, went into the house, ashamed to see any come to hear such an unspeakably worthless wretch. However, God enabled me to speak with clearness, power, and pungency.

Thursday, November 4. [At Lebanon] I was concerned that I had no more sense of my insufficiency and unworthiness. O it is sweet *lying in the dust!* But it is distressing to feel in my soul that hell of corruption.—In the afternoon I had a sense of the sweetness of a strict, close, and constant devotedness to God, and felt a pleasing yet painful concern, lest I should spend some moments *without God*. O may I always *live to God!*—In the evening I felt an intense desire to spend every moment for God.—God is unspeakably gracious to me continually: In times past, he has given me inexpressible sweetness in the performance of duty, frequently my soul has enjoyed much of God; but has been ready to say, “Lord, it is good to be here;” and so to indulge sloth. But of late God has been pleased to keep my soul *hungry*, almost continually; so that I have been filled with a kind of pleasing pain. When I really enjoy God, I feel my desires of him the more insatiable, and my thirstings after holiness the more unquenchable; and the Lord will not allow me to feel as though I were fully supplied and satisfied, but keeps me still reaching forward: and I feel barren and empty, as though I could not live, without more of God in me; I feel ashamed and guilty *before God*. Oh! I see, “the law is spiritual, but I am carnal.” I do not, I cannot live to God. Oh for holiness! Oh for more of God in my soul! Oh this pleasing pain! It makes my soul press after God; the language of it is, “Then shall I be satisfied, when I awake in God’s likeness,”  
(Psal.

(Pfal. xxvii. *ult.*) but never, never before: and consequently I am engaged to “*press towards the mark,*” day by day. O that I may feel this continual hunger, and not be retarded, but rather be animated by every cluster from Canaan, to reach forward in the narrow way, for the full enjoyment and possession of the heavenly inheritance! O that I may never loiter in my heavenly journey.

Lord’s day, November 7. it seemed as if such an unholy wretch as I never could arrive at that blessedness, to be “*holy, as God is holy.*” At noon I longed for sanctification, and conformity to God, Oh, that is THE ALL, THE ALL! The Lord help me to *press after God* for ever.

Monday, November 8. I longed for an arrival in the *heavenly country*, the blessed paradise of God. Through divine goodness, I have scarce seen the day, for two months, but *death* has looked so pleasant to me, that I could have rejoiced the *present* should be my *last*; and I trust that I shall be able to say, “O death, where is thy sting!” and, “O grave, where is thy victory!”

Friday, November 19. [At New-Haven] I received a letter from the Rev. Mr. Pemberton of New-York, desiring me speedily to go down thither, and consult about the Indian affairs in those parts, and to meet certain gentlemen there that were intrusted with those affairs. I retired with two or three friends, and prayed; and was enabled to leave myself and all my concerns with God.

Wednesday, November 24. I came to New-York; felt still much concerned about the importance of my business; put up many earnest requests to God; was confused with the noise and tumult of the city; enjoyed but little time alone with God; but my soul longed after him.

Thursday, November 25. I spent much time in prayer and supplication: was examined by some gentlemen of my Christian experiences, and my acquaintance with divinity, and some other studies, in order to my improvement in that important affair

of gospellizing the Heathen\* : was made sensible of my great ignorance and unfitness for public service : I had the most abasing thoughts of myself, I think, that ever I had ; I thought myself the worst wretch that ever lived : it pained my very heart, that any body should shew me any respect. Alas ! me thought, how sadly they are deceived in me ! how miserably would they be disappointed, if they knew my inside ! Oh my heart !—And in this depressed condition, I was forced to go and preach to a considerable assembly, before some grave and learned ministers ; but felt such a pressure from a sense of my vileness, ignorance, and unfitness to appear in public, that I was almost overcome with it ; my soul was grieved for the congregation, that they should sit there to hear such a *dead dog* as I preach ; I thought myself infinitely indebted to the people, and longed that God would reward them with his grace.

\* *These gentlemen that examined Mr. Brainerd, were the correspondents in New-York, New-Jersey, and Pennsylvania, of the honourable society in Scotland for propagating Christian knowledge ; to whom was committed the management of their affairs in those parts, and who were now met at New-York.*

---

## P A R T IV.

*From the time of his being appointed Missionary, to his entrance on his mission among the Indians at Kaunaumceek.*

**F**RIDAY, November 26. I had still a sense of my own vileness, and endeavoured as much as I could to keep alone. Oh, what a nothing, what dust and ashes am I !—I enjoyed some comfort in spreading my complaints before God.

Saturday, Nov. 27. I committed my soul to God with some degree of comfort ; left New-York about nine in the morning ; came away with a distressing

sense of my unspeakable unworthiness. Surely I may well love all my brethren: for none of them all is as vile as I; whatever they do outwardly, yet it seems to me none is conscious of so much inward sin. O my leanness, my barrenness, my past bitterness, and want of a gospel-temper!

Wednesday, December 1. My soul breathed after God, in longing desires of conformity to him: my soul was brought to rest itself, and all on his rich grace, and felt strength to do or suffer any thing that divine providence should allot me.

[Within the space of the next nine days, he went a journey from Newton to Haddam, his native town; and after staying there some days, returned again into the western part of Connecticut, and came to Southbury.]

Saturday, December 11. I conversed with a dear friend, to whom I had thought of giving a liberal education, that he might be fitted for the gospel-ministry. I acquainted him with my thoughts in that matter, and so left him to consider of it, till I should see him again. Then I rode to Bethlehem, to Mr. Bellamy's lodgings; and spent the evening with him in sweet conversation and prayer.

Lord's day, December 12. I felt a distressing need of divine help; I went to meeting trembling: but it pleased God to assist me in prayer and sermon: I think, my soul scarce ever penetrated so far into the immaterial world, nor were my devotions ever so much refined, and free from gross conceptions and imaginations. I preached with some sweetness, from Matth. vi. 33. "But seek ye first the kingdom of God," &c. and in the afternoon from Rom. xv. 30. Blessed be God, I have reason to think, that my religion is become more spiritual, by means of my late inward conflicts. May I always be willing that God should use his own methods with me! — I felt much of the sweetness of religion, and the tenderness of the gospel-temper: I found a dear love to all mankind, and was afraid of scarcely any thing so much as lest  
some

some motion of anger or resentment should, some time or other, creep into my heart.

Lord's day, December 19. At the sacrament of the Lord's supper, I seemed strong in the Lord; and the world, with all its frowns and flatteries, in a great measure disappeared, so that my soul had nothing to do with them: and I felt a disposition to be wholly and for ever the Lord's.

Tuesday, December 21. I had a sense of my insufficiency for any public work, as well as to live to God. I rode over to Derby, and preached there: it pleased God to give me sweet assistance, and to enable me to speak with a soft and tender power and energy.—We had afterwards a comfortable evening in singing and prayer: God enabled me to pray with as much spirituality and sweetness as I have done for some time: my mind seemed to be unclothed of sense and imagination, and was in a measure let into the world of spirits. This day was, I trust, made profitable to a number of us, to advance our souls in holiness and conformity to God: the glory be to him for ever! Amen. How blessed it is to grow more and more like God!

Lord's day, December 26. I felt much sweetness and tenderness in prayer, especially my whole soul seemed to love my worst enemies, and I was enabled to pray for those that are strangers and enemies to God with a great degree of softness and pathetic fervour.

Monday, December 27. I enjoyed a precious season; I had a sweet sense of the pure spirituality of the religion of Christ Jesus. In the evening, I preached with much freedom, power and pungency. O the tenderness I felt in my soul! if ever I felt the temper of Christ, it was now. Blessed be my God, I have seldom enjoyed a more comfortable and profitable day than this. O that I could spend all my time for God!

Friday, January 14, 1742-3. My spiritual conflicts were unspeakably dreadful, heavier than the mountains and overflowing floods: I seemed inclos-

ed, as it were, in hell itself: I was deprived of all sense of God, even of the being of a God; and that was my misery. This was distress, the nearest a-kin to the damned's torments, that I ever endured: their torment, I am sure, will consist much in a privation of God, and consequently of all good. This taught me the absolute dependence of a creature upon the Creator, for every crumb of happiness it enjoys. Oh! I feel that if there is no God, though I might live for ever here, and enjoy not only this, but all other worlds, I should be ten thousand times more miserable than a toad. My soul was in such anguish I could not eat, but felt, as I supposed a poor wretch would, that is just going to the place of execution. I was almost swallowed up with anguish, when I saw people gathering together to hear me preach. However, I went to the house of God, and found not much relief in the first prayer: But afterwards God was pleased to give me freedom and enlargement, and I spent the evening comfortably.

Lord's day, January 23. I scarce ever felt myself so unfit to exist, as now: I saw I was not worthy of a place among the Indians, where I am going: I thought I should be ashamed to look them in the face, and much more to have any respect shewn me. Indeed I felt myself banished from the earth, as if all places were too good for such a wretch as I: I thought I should be ashamed to go among the very savages of Africa; I appeared to myself a creature fit for nothing, neither heaven nor earth.—None knows, but those that feel it, what the soul endures that is sensibly shut out from the presence of God; alas! it is more bitter than death.

Wednesday, January 26. I preached to a pretty large assembly: insisted on humility, and steadfastness in keeping God's commands; and that through humility we should prefer one another in love. I felt sweetly calm, and full of brotherly love; and never more free from party-spirit. I hope, some good will follow, that Christians will be freed from party-zeal and censuring one another.

[On Thursday, after a considerable time spent in prayer and Christian conversation, he rode to New-London.]

Friday, January 28. Here I found some carried away with a false zeal and bitterness. Oh, the want of a gospel-temper is greatly to be lamented. I spent the evening in conversing with some about some points of conduct in both ministers and private Christians; but did not agree with them: God had not *taught them with briars and thorns* to be of a kind disposition toward mankind.

Wednesday, February 2. I preached my farewell-fermon, at the house of an aged man, who had been unable to attend on the public worship for some time; and this morning spent the time in prayer, having taken leave of my friends, I set out on my journey towards the Indians; though by the way I was to spend some time at East-Hampton on Long-Island, by the leave of the commissioners; and being accompanied by a messenger from East-Hampton, we travelled to Lyme. On the road I felt an uncommon pressure of mind: I seemed to struggle hard for some pleasure here below, and seemed loth to give up all; I saw I was throwing myself into all hardships and distresses: I thought it would be less difficult to lie down in the grave; but yet I chose to go, rather than stay.—I came to Lyme that night.

[He waited the two next days for a passage over the Sound, and spent much of the time in inward conflicts.]

On Saturday he crossed the Sound, landed on Long-Island, and travelled to East-Hampton. And the seven following days he spent there, for the most part, under extreme dejection of mind.

Lord's day, February 13. I was under a great degree of discouragement; knew not how it was possible for me to preach in the afternoon, was ready to give up all for gone! but God was pleased to assist me. In the evening, my heart was sweetly drawn out after God, and devoted to him.

Tuesday, February 15. Early in the day I felt some comfort; afterwards I walked into a neighbouring grove, and felt more as a stranger on earth than ever before; dead to any of the enjoyments of the world, as if I had been dead in anatural sense.—In the evening I had sweetness in secret duty: God was then my portion, and my soul rose above those *deep waters*, into which I have sunk so low of late.

Thursday, February 17. I preached this day at a little village belonging to East-Hampton; and God was pleased to give me his gracious presence and assistance, so that I spake with freedom, boldness, and power. In the evening, I spent some time with a dear Christian friend; felt as on the brink of eternity; my soul enjoyed sweetness in lively apprehensions of standing before the glorious God: prayed with my dear friend, and discoursed with the utmost solemnity. And truly it was a little emblem of heaven itself.

Friday, February 18. I felt sweetly most of the day, and found access to the throne of grace. Blessed be the Lord for any intervals of heavenly delight and composure, while I am engaged in the field of battle. O that I might be serious, solemn, and always vigilant, while in an evil world! O, I long to *live to God!*

[During the next fortnight, he, for the most part, enjoyed much spiritual peace and comfort. And it appears by his account, that this space of time was filled up with great diligence and earnestness in serving God, in study, prayer, meditation, preaching, and private instructing and counselling.]

Monday, March 7. This morning when I arose, I found my heart go forth after God in longing desires of conformity to him; and in secret prayer I found myself sweetly quickened and drawn out in praises to God for all he had done to and for me, and for all my inward trials and distresses; my heart ascribed glory, glory, glory to the blessed God! and bid welcome to all inward distress again, if God saw meet to exercise me with it; time appeared but an

inch long, and eternity at hand; and I thought I could with patience and cheerfulness bear any thing for the cause of God; for I saw that a moment would bring me to a world of peace and blessedness; and my soul, by the strength of the Lord, rose far above this lower world, and all the vain amusements and frightful disappointments of it.

Lord's day, March 13. At noon, I thought it impossible for me to preach, by reason of bodily weakness and inward deadness; and in the first prayer, I was so weak that I could hardly stand; but in sermon, God strengthened me, so that I spake near an hour and half with freedom, clearness, and tender power, from Gen. v. 24. "And Enoch walked with God." I was sweetly assisted to insist on a close *walk with God*, and to leave this as my parting advice to God's people here, that *they should walk with God*. May the God of all grace succeed my poor labours in this place!

Saturday, March 19. I was distressed under a sense of my ignorance, darkness, and unworthiness; got alone, and poured out my complaint to God in the bitterness of my soul.—In the afternoon I rode to Newark, and had some sweetness in conversation with Mr. Burr, and in praying together. O blessed be God for ever and ever, for any enlivening and quickening!

Lord's day, March 20. I preached in the forenoon: God gave some assistance and sweetness, and enabled me to speak with real tenderness, love, and impartiality. In the evening, I preached again; and, of a truth, God was pleased to assist a poor worm. Blessed be God, I was enabled to speak with life, power, and passionate desire of the edification of God's people. In the evening, I felt something spiritual and watchful, lest my heart should by any means be drawn away from God. Oh, when shall I come to that blessed world, where every power of my soul will be incessantly and eternally wound up, in heavenly employments and enjoyments, to the highest degree!

[On Monday he went to Woodbridge, where the *correspondents*, instead of sending him to the Indians at the Forks of Delaware, as they intended, ordered him to go to a number of Indians, at Kaunaumeeck, a place in the province of New-York, in the woods between Stockbridge and Albany. This alteration was occasioned by two things, *viz.* 1. Information that the correspondents had received of some contention now subsisting between the white people and the Indians at Delaware, which they supposed would be a hindrance at present to their entertainment of a missionary, and to his success among them. And, 2. Some intimations they had received from Mr. Sergeant, missionary to the Indians at Stockbridge, concerning the Indians at Kaunaumeeck, and the prospect of success that a missionary might have among them.]

## P A R T V.

*From his first beginning to instruct the Indians at Kaunaumeeck, to his Ordination.*

**F**RIDAY, April 1, 1743. I rode to Kaunaumeeck, near twenty miles from Stockbridge, where the Indians live, with whom I am concerned, and there lodged on a little heap of straw: was greatly exercised with inward distresses all day; and in the evening, my heart was sunk, and I seemed to have no God to go to. O that God would help me!

The place, as to its situation, was sufficiently lonesome, and unpleasant, being encompassed with mountains and woods; twenty miles distant from any English inhabitants; six or seven from any Dutch; and more than two from a family that came, some time since, from the Highlands of Scotland, and had then lived about two years in this wilderness. In this family I lodged about the space of three months, the master of it being the only person with whom I could readily converse in those parts, except my interpreter; others understanding very little English.

Thursday,

Thursday, April 7. I appeared to myself exceedingly ignorant, weak, helpless, and unworthy, and altogether unequal to my work. It seemed to me I should never do any service, or have any success among the Indians. My soul was weary of my life: I longed for death, beyond measure. When I thought of any godly soul departed, my soul was ready to envy him his privilege, thinking, "Oh, when will my turn come! must it be years first!"—But I know those desires rose partly for want of resignation to God. Towards night, I had faith in prayer, and some assistance in writing. O that God would keep me near him!

Friday, April 8. I was exceedingly pressed under a sense of my *party-spirit*, in times past, while I attempted to promote the cause of God: its vile nature appeared in such odious colours, that my very heart was pained: I saw how poor souls stumbled over it into everlasting destruction, and was constrained to make that prayer in the bitterness of my soul, "O Lord, deliver me from blood-guiltiness." I saw my desert of hell on this account. My soul was full of anguish and shame before God, that I had spent so much time in conversation tending only to promote a *party-spirit*. I saw I had not suitably prized mortification, self-denial, resignation under all adversities, meekness, love, candour, and holiness of heart and life: and this day was almost wholly spent in such soul afflicting reflections on my past conduct.—Of late, I have thought much of having the kingdom of Christ advanced in the world; but now I saw I had enough to do within myself. The Lord be merciful to me a sinner, and wash my soul!

Lord's day, April 10. I preached to the Indians, both forenoon and afternoon. They behaved soberly in general: two or three appeared under some religious concern; with whom I discoursed privately; and one told me, "her heart had cried, ever since she heard me preach first."

Wednesday,

Wednesday, April 13. My heart was overwhelmed within me: I verily thought I was the meanest, vilest, most helpless, ignorant creature living. And yet I knew what God had done for my soul: though sometimes I was assaulted with doubts whether it was possible for such a wretch as I to be in a state of grace.

Tuesday, April 19. In the morning, I enjoyed some sweet repose and rest in God; felt some strength and confidence in God; and my soul was refreshed and comforted. My soul seemed lifted above the *deep waters*, wherein it has been so long almost drowned; I found myself engaged for the advancement of Christ's kingdom in my own soul, more than in others, more than in the Heathen world.

Wednesday, April 20. I set apart this day for fasting and prayer, to bow my soul before God for grace; especially that all my inward distresses might be sanctified to my soul. I endeavoured also to remember the goodness of God to me in the year past, this day being my birth-day. Having obtained help of God, I am now arrived at the age of twenty-five years. My soul was pained, to think of my barrenness and deadness; that I have lived so little to the glory of the eternal God. I spent the day in the woods alone, and there poured out my complaint to God. O that God would enable me to live to his glory for the future!

Friday, April 22. My leanness testifies against me! my soul abhors itself for its unlikeness to God, its inactivity and sluggishness. When I have done all, alas, what an unprofitable servant am I! My soul groans, to see the hours of the day roll away, because I do not fill them, in spirituality and heavenly-mindedness. And yet I long they should speed their pace, to hasten me to my eternal home, where I may fill up all my moments, through eternity, for God and his glory.

Tuesday, May 10. I was extremely pressed with a sense of guilt, pollution, blindness: "The iniquity of my heels have compassed me about; the sins of my youth have been set in order before me; they have gone

gone over my head, as an heavy burden, too heavy for me to bear." Almost all the actions of my life, past seem to be covered over with sin and guilt; and those of them that I performed in the most conscientious manner, now fill me with shame and confusion. Oh! the *pride, selfishness, ignorance, bitterness, party-zeal, and the want of love, candour, meekness, and gentleness*, that have attended my attempts to promote religion; and this when I have reason to hope I had real assistance from above, and some sweet intercourse with heaven! But, alas, what corrupt mixtures attended my best duties!

After several weeks I found my distance from the Indians a very great disadvantage to my work amongst them, and very burdensome to myself; as I was obliged to travel forward and backward almost daily on foot, having no pasture in which I could keep my horse for that purpose. And after all my pains, I could not be with the Indians in the evening and morning, which were usually the best hours to find them at home, and when they could best attend my instructions.

I therefore resolved to remove, and live with or near the Indians, that I might watch all opportunities, when they were generally at home, and take the advantage of such seasons for their instruction.

Accordingly I removed soon after; and, for a time, lived with them in one of their *wigwams*: and not long after, built me a small house, where I spent the remainder of that year entirely alone; my interpreter (who was an Indian) choosing rather to live in a wigwam among his own countrymen.

But although the difficulties of this solitary way of living are not the least, yet I can truly say, the burden I felt respecting my *great work* among the poor Indians, the fear and concern that continually hung upon my spirit, lest they should be prejudiced against Christianity, by means of the insinuations of some who (although they are called *Christians*) seem to have no concern for Christ's *kingdom*, but had rather the Indians should remain Heathens, that they may with  
more

more ease cheat, and enrich themselves by them; the burden, I say, the fear and concern I felt in these respects, were much more pressing to me, than all the difficulties that attended the circumstances of my living.

As to the *state or temper of mind*, in which I found these Indians, at my first coming among them, it was much more encouraging, than what appears among those who are altogether uncultivated. Their jealousies and suspicion, and their prejudices against Christianity, were in a great measure removed by the long-continued labours of the Reverend Mr. Sargeant among a number of the same tribe, in a place more than twenty miles distant: by which means these were, in some good degree, prepared to entertain the truths of Christianity, instead of objecting against them, and appearing entirely untractable, as is common with them at first, and as these appeared a few years ago. Some of them, at least, appeared well disposed toward religion, and seemed much pleased with my coming among them.

Wednesday, May 18. My circumstances are such that I have no comfort, of any kind, but what I have in God. I live in the most lonesome wilderness; have but one single person to converse with, that can speak English.\* Most of the talk I hear, is either Highland-Scotch or Indian. I have no fellow-Christian to whom I might unbosom myself, and lay open my spiritual sorrows, and with whom I might take sweet counsel in conversation about heavenly things, and join in prayer. I live poorly with regard to the comforts of life: most of my diet consists

\* This person was Mr. Brainerd's interpreter; who was an ingenious young Indian belonging to Stockbridge, whose name was John Wauwaumpequunnaunt; who had been instructed in the Christian religion by Mr. Sergeant; and had lived with the Reverend Mr. Williams of Long-Meadow, and had been further instructed by him, at the charge of Mr. Hollis of London; and understood both English and Indian very well, and wrote a good hand.

sifts of boiled corn, and hasty-pudding. I lodge on a bundle of straw, my labour is hard; and I have little appearance of success. The Indians affairs are very difficult; having no land to live on, but what the Dutch threaten to drive them from; they have no regard to the souls of the poor Indians; and, they hate me, because I come to preach to them.—But that which makes all my difficulties grievous to be borne, is, that “God hides his face from me.”

[From this time forward he had various exercises of mind: but it seems, in the general, to have been with him much after the same manner as it had been hitherto from his first coming to Kaunaameek, till he got into his own house, (a little hut, that he made chiefly with his own hands, with long and hard labour,) which was near seven weeks from this time. Great part of this time, he was depressed with melancholy. How it was with him in those dark seasons, he further describes in his diary for July 2. “My soul is, and has for a long time been in a piteous condition, wading through a series of sorrows, of various kinds. I have been so crushed down sometimes with a sense of my meanness and infinite unworthiness, that I have been ashamed that any, even the meanest of my fellow-creatures, should so much as spend a thought about me, and have wished while I have travelled among the thick brakes, to drop into everlasting oblivion. In this case, I have almost resolved never again to see any of my acquaintance; and really thought, I could not do it and hold up my face; and have longed for the remotest region, for a retreat from all my friends, that I might not be seen or heard of any more.—Sometimes the consideration of my ignorance has been a means of my great distress and anxiety. And especially my soul has been in anguish with fear, shame, and guilt, that ever I had preached, or had any thought that way.—Sometimes my soul has been in distress on feeling some particular corruptions: having, at the same time, ten thousand former sins and follies presented to my view.—And these attended with such external circum-

stances as mine at present are ; destitute of most of the conveniencies of life, and I may say, of all the pleasures of it ; without a friend to communicate any of my sorrows to, and sometimes without any place of retirement, where I may unburden my soul before God, which has greatly contributed to my distress.

[One main occasion of that distressing gloominess which he was so much exercised with at Kaunau-meek, was reflecting on his past errors and misguided zeal at *college*. Therefore he repeated his endeavours this year for reconciliation with the governors of the college. Although he had been at New-Haven, in June, this year, and had attempted a reconciliation ; yet, in the beginning of July, he made another journey thither, and renewed his attempt, but still in vain.]

Saturday, July 30. Just at night, moved into *my own house*, and lodged there that night ; found it much better spending the time alone at my own house, than in the *wigwam* where I was before.

Monday, August 1. I was busy in farther labours on my house.—Felt a little of the sweetness of religion, and thought it was worth while to *follow after God* through a thousand snares, deserts, and death itself. O that I might always *follow after holiness*, that I may be fully conformed to God !

Wednesday, August 3. I am now uninterruptedly alone ; and find my retirement comfortable. I have enjoyed more sense of divine things within a few days past, than for some time before. I longed after holiness, humility, and meekness : O that God would enable me to “pass the time of my sojourning here in his fear,” and always *live to him* !

Thursday, August 4. I have generally found, the more I do in secret prayer, the more I enjoy of a spirit of prayer : and I frequently have found the contrary, when with journeying or otherwise, I have been deprived of retirement. A seasonable steady performance of secret duties in their proper hours, and a careful improvement of all time, filling up every hour with some profitable labour, either of  
heart,

heart, head, or hands, are excellent means of spiritual peace and boldness before God. "Christ" indeed "is our peace, and by him we have boldness of access to God;" but a *good conscience, void of offence*, is an excellent preparation for an approach to the divine presence. Filling up our time *with and for* God, is the way to rise up and lie down in peace.

Saturday, August 13. I was enabled in secret prayer to raise my soul to God, with desire and delight. It was indeed a blessed season to my soul: I found the comfort of being a Christian: "I counted the sufferings of the present life not worthy to be compared with the glory" of divine enjoyments even in this world. All my past sorrows seemed to disappear, and I "remembered no more the sorrow for joy."—With what a filial tenderness, the soul hangs on, and confides in *the Rock of ages*, at such a season, that he will "never leave it nor forsake it," that he will cause "all things to work together for its good!" I longed, that others should know how good a God the Lord is. My soul was full of tenderness and love, even to the most inveterate of my enemies. I longed that God should do just as he pleased with me and every thing else. I felt exceeding serious, calm, and peaceful, and encouraged to press after holiness as long as I live, whatever difficulties and trials may be in my way.

Monday, August 15. In my weak state of body, I was not a little distressed for want of suitable food. I had no bread, nor could I get any. I am forced to go or send ten or fifteen miles for all the bread I eat; and sometimes it is mouldy and sour before I eat it, if I get any considerable quantity: and then again I have none for some days together, for want of an opportunity to send for it. And this was my case now: but through divine goodness I had some Indian *meal*, of which I made little cakes, and fried them. And I felt contented with my circumstances, and sweetly resigned to God. In prayer I enjoyed great freedom; and blessed God as much for my present circumstances, as if I had been a king, and I never

feel comfortably, but when I find my soul going forth after God: if I cannot be holy, I must be miserable for ever.

Lord's day, August 21. I fell down before the Lord, and groaned under my own vileness, barrenness, deadness, and felt as if I was guilty of soul-murder, in speaking to immortal souls in such a manner as I had done.—I was very ill and full of pain in the evening; and my soul mourned that I had spent so much time to so little profit.

Monday, August 22. I had intense and passionate breathings of soul after holiness, and very clear manifestations of my utter inability to procure, or work it in myself; it is wholly owing to the power of God. O, with what tenderness the love and desire of holiness fills the soul! I wanted to wing out of myself to God, or rather to get a conformity to him: but, alas! I cannot add to my stature in grace one cubit. However, my soul can never leave striving for it; or at least groaning, that it cannot obtain more purity of heart.

Tuesday, August 23. I poured out my soul for all the world, friends, and enemies. My soul was concerned for Christ's kingdom that it might appear, in the whole earth. And I abhorred the very thought of a *party* in religion! Let the truth of God appear, where-ever it is; and God have the glory for ever.

Wednesday, August 24. I thought, if God should say, "Cease making any provision for this life, for you shall in a few days go into eternity," my soul would leap for joy. O that I may both "desire to be dissolved," and "wait patiently all the days of my appointed time 'till my change come!"—But, alas! I am very unfit for the business and blessedness of heaven.—O for more holiness!

Thursday, August 25. I find it is impossible to enjoy peace and tranquility of mind without a careful improvement of time. This is really an imitation of God and Christ Jesus: "My father worketh hitherto, and I work," says our Lord. But still, if we would be

be like God, we must see that we fill up our time for him.—I daily long to dwell in perfect light and love. In the mean time, my soul mourns that I make so little progress in grace, and preparation for the world of blessedness: I see and know that I am a very barren tree in God's vineyard, and that he might justly say, "Cut it down," &c. O that God would make me more lively and vigorous in grace, for his own glory!

Lord's day, August 28. I was much perplexed with some Dutchmen. All their discourse turned upon the things of the world. Oh, what a *hell* it would be to spend an eternity with such men! Well might David say, "I beheld the transgressors and was grieved."—But adored be God, *heaven* is a place "into which no unclean thing enters." O I long for the holiness of that world! Lord prepare me for it.

Wednesday, August 31. Eternal things engrossed all my thoughts; and I longed to be in the world of spirits. O how happy is it, to have all our thoughts swallowed up in that world; to feel one's self a stranger in this, diligently seeking a road through it, a sure road to the heavenly Jerusalem!

Thursday, September 1. I always feel comfortably when God realizes death, and the things of another world to my mind: whenever my mind is taken off from the things of this world, and set on God, my soul is at rest.

Tuesday, September 13. I rode to New-Haven. I find, though my inward trials are great, and a life of solitude gives them greater advantages to penetrate the inmost recesses of the soul; yet it is better to be alone, than incumbered with noise and tumult. I find it very difficult maintaining a sense of divine things, while removing from place to place, diverted with new objects, and filled with care and business. A settled steady business is best adapted to a life of strict religion.

Wednesday, September 14. This day I ought to have taken my *degree*;\* but God sees fit to deny it

\* This being commencement-day.

me. And though I was afraid of being overwhelmed with confusion, when I should see my *class-mates* take theirs; yet, in the very season of it, God enabled me with calmness to say, "The will of the Lord be done." Indeed, I have scarcely felt my mind so sedate and comfortable for some time. I have long feared this season, and expected my humility, meekness, patience, and resignation would be tried: but found much more pleasure and divine comfort than I expected.

Thursday, September 15. It is always a comfort to me, to hear spiritual discourse. O that ministers and people were more spiritual and devoted to God!—Towards night, I offered the following reflections in writing, to the rector and trustees of the college, (the same that I had offered to the rector before, and intreated him to accept); and this I did, that if possible I might cut off all occasion of offence, from those that seek occasion.

"Whereas I have said before several persons, concerning Mr. Whittelsey, one of the tutors of Yale-college, that I did not believe he had any more grace than the chair I then leaned upon; I humbly confess that herein I have sinned against God, and acted contrary to the rules of his word, and have injured Mr. Whittelsey. I had no right to make thus free with his character; and had no just reason to say as I did concerning him. My fault herein was the more aggravated, in that I said this concerning one that was so much my superior, and one that I was obliged to treat with special respect and honour, by reason of the relation I stood in to him in the college. Such a manner of behaviour, I confess, did not become a Christian; it was taking too much upon me, and did not favour of that humble respect, that I ought to have expressed towards Mr. Whittelsey. I have often reflected on this act with grief, on account of the sin of it: and am willing to lie low, and be abased before God and man for it: and humbly ask the forgiveness of the governors of the college, and of the whole society; but of Mr. Whittelsey in particular.

particular. And whereas I have been accused of saying concerning the rector of Yale-college, that I wondered he did not expect to drop down dead for sinning the scholars that followed Mr. Tenent to Milford; I seriously profess, that I do not remember my saying any thing to this purpose. But if I did, I utterly condemn it, and detest all such kind of behaviour. And I now appear, to judge and condemn myself for going once to the separate meeting in New-Haven, though the rector had refused to give me leave. For this I humbly ask the rector's forgiveness. And whether the governors of the college shall ever see cause to remove the academical censure I lie under, or no, yet I am willing to appear, if they think fit, openly to own, and to humble myself for those things I have herein confessed."

God has made me willing to do any thing, that I can do, consistent with truth, for the sake of peace, and that I might not be a stumbling-block and offence to others. For this reason I can cheerfully give up what I verily believe, after the most impartial search, is my right. God has given me that disposition, that if this were the case, that a man has done me an hundred injuries, and I (though ever so much provoked to it) have done him one, I am heartily willing humbly to confess my fault to him, and on my knees to ask forgiveness of him; though at the same time he should justify himself in all the injuries he has done me, and should only make use of my humble confession to blacken my character the more, and represent me as the only person guilty; yea, though he should as it were insult me, and say, "he knew all this before, and that I was making work for repentance." Though what I said concerning Mr. Whittelsey was only spoken in private, to a friend or two; and being partly overheard, was related to the rector, and by him extorted from my friends; yet, seeing it was divulged and made public, I was willing to confess my fault therein publicly.\*

[The

\* I was witness to the very Christian spirit Mr. Brainerd shewed at that time, being then at New-Haven, and being one

[The next day he went to Derby; then to Southbury, where he spent the Sabbath: and speaks of some spiritual comfort; but complains much of unfixedness, and wanderings of mind in religion.]

Monday, September 19. I felt serious, kind and tender towards all mankind, and longed that holiness might flourish on earth.

Tuesday, September 20. I had thoughts of going forward on my journey to my Indians; but toward night was taken with a hard pain in my teeth, and shivering cold, and could not possibly recover a comfortable degree of warmth the whole night following. continued very full of pain all night; and in the morning had a fever, and pains almost all over my body. I had a sense of the divine goodness in appointing this to be the place of my sickness, among my friends. I should probably have perished, if I had first got home to my own house in the wilderness where I have none to converse with but the poor rude ignorant Indians. I continued thus, mostly confined to my bed, till Friday night; very full of pain but not afraid of death.— On Friday evening my pains went off suddenly.

[From

*that he saw fit to consult on that occasion. (This was the first time that ever I had opportunity of personal acquaintance with him.) There appeared in him a great degree of calmness and humility; without the least appearance of rising of spirit for any ill treatment he had suffered, or the least backwardness to abase himself before them whom he thought had wronged him. What he did was without any objection or appearance of reluctance, even in private to his friends. Earnest application was made on his behalf to the authority of the college, that he might have his degree then given him; and particularly by the Reverend Mr. Burr of Newark, one of the correspondents of the honourable society in Scotland; he being sent from New-Jersey to New-Haven, by the rest of the commissioners, for that end; and many arguments were used, but without success.—What manner of spirit were these Governors of? And do these dare to call themselves Christians?*

[From this time, he gradually recovered; and on the next Tuesday was able to go forward on his journey; but was till the Tuesday following before he reached Kaunaumeek.]

Tuesday, October 4. This day I rode home to my own house and people. The poor Indians appeared very glad of my return. I presently fell on my knees, and blessed God for my safe return. I have taken many considerable journeys since this time last year, and yet God has never suffered one of my bones to be broken, or any distressing calamity to befall me, though I have been often exposed to cold and hunger in the wilderness, where the comforts of life were not to be had; have frequently been lost in the woods; and sometimes obliged to ride much of the night; and once lay out in the woods all night.

Lord's day, October 16. I retired, and poured out my soul to God with much freedom; and yet in anguish, to find myself so unspeakably sinful and unworthy before a holy God. I was now much resigned under God's dispensations towards me, though my trials had been very great. But thought whether I could be resigned, if God should let the French Indians come upon me, and deprive me of my life, or carry me away captive, (though I knew of no special reason then to propose this trial to myself,) and my soul seemed so far to rest in God, that the sting and terror of these things was gone. Presently after I received the following letter by a messenger sent on purpose.

“ Sir, Just now we received advices from Col. Stoddard, that there is the utmost danger of a rupture with France. He has received the same from his excellency our governor, ordering him to give notice to all the exposed places, that they may secure themselves the best they can against any sudden invasion. We thought best to send directly to Kaunaumeek, that you may take the prudentest measures for your safety. I am, Sir, &c.”

I thought, it came in a good season; for my heart seemed fixed on God, and therefore I was not surprised;

prised: but this news only made me more serious, and taught me that I must not please myself with any of the comforts of life which I had been preparing.]

Saturday, October 22. I had but little communion with God. This world is a dark cloudy mansion. Oh, when will the Son of righteousness shine on my soul without cessation or intermission!

Lord's day, October 23. I had some freedom and warmth, both parts of the day. And my people were very attentive. In the evening, two or three came to me under concern for their souls; to whom I was enabled to discourse closely, and with some earnestness and desire.

[He seems, through the whole of this week, to have been greatly engaged to fill up every inch of time in the service of God, and to have been most diligently employed in study, prayer, and instructing the Indians; and from time to time expresses longings of soul after God, and the advancement of his kingdom.]

Monday, October 31. My soul was so lifted up to God, that I could pour out my desires to him, for more grace and further degrees of sanctification, with abundant freedom. I longed to be more abundantly prepared for that blessedness, with which I was then in some measure refreshed.

Thursday, November 3. I spent this day in secret fasting and prayer, from morning till night. Early in the morning, I had some assistance in prayer. Afterwards, I read the story of Elijah the prophet, 1 Kings xvii. xviii. and xix chapters. My soul was much moved, observing the faith, zeal, and power of that holy man: and how he wrestled with God in prayer. My soul then cried with Elisha, "Where is the Lord God of Elijah?" I longed for more faith! My soul breathed after God, and pleaded with him, that a "double portion of that spirit," which was given to Elijah, might "rest on me." And that which was refreshing to my soul, was, I saw God is the *same* that he was in the days of Elijah.—I was enabled to wrestle with God by prayer, in a more affectionate,

ectionate, humble, and importunate manner, than I have for many months past. Nothing seemed too hard for God to perform; nothing too great for me to hope for from him.—I had for many months lost all hopes of doing any special service for God in the world; it appeared entirely impossible, that one so vile should be thus employed for God. But at this time God was pleased to revive this hope.—Afterwards I read the third chapter of Exodus and on to the xxth, and saw more of the *glory* and *majesty* of God discovered in those chapters, than ever I had seen before; frequently in the mean time falling on my knees, and crying to God for the faith of Moses, and for a manifestation of the *divine glory*. My soul was ardent in prayer, and I was enabled to wrestle for myself, for my friends, and for the church of God. And I felt more desire to see the power of God in the conversion of souls, than I have done for a long season. Blessed be God for this season of fasting and prayer! May his goodness always abide with me, and draw my soul to him!

Monday, November 7. This morning my mind was solemn, fixed, affectionate, and ardent in desires after holiness; and felt full of tenderness and love; and my affections seemed to be dissolved into kindness and softness.—My soul longed after God, and cried to him with filial freedom, reverence, and boldness. O that I might be entirely consecrated and devoted to God!

Thursday, November 10. I spent this day in fasting and prayer. In the morning I was dull and lifeless: But after some time, reading 2 Kings xix chapter, my soul was moved and affected. I saw there was no way for the afflicted to take, but to go to God with all their sorrows. Hezekiah, in his great distress, went and spread his complaint before the Lord. I was then enabled to see the mighty power of God, and my extreme need of that power; and to cry to God affectionately and ardently for his power to be exercised towards me.

[The remaining part of this week, and the two following weeks, he was very ill, and full of pain; and yet obliged, to be at great fatigues, travelling day and night, in stormy and severe seasons. He from time to time, within this space, speaks of outgoings of soul after God; his heart strengthened in God; seasons of divine sweetness and comfort. And yet there are many complaints of lifelessness, distance from God, and unprofitableness. But still there appears a constant care, from day to day, not to lose time, but to employ it all for God.]

Tuesday, November 29. I began to study the Indian tongue, with Mr. Sergeant at Stockbridge.\*—I was perplexed for want of more retirement.—I love to live alone in my own little *cottage*, where I can spend much time in prayer.

Saturday, December 3. I rode home to my house and people. Suffered much with extreme cold.—I trust, I shall ere long arrive, where my toils shall cease.

Monday, December 5. I rode to Stockbridge, but was almost outdone with the extreme cold. I had some refreshing meditations by the way; but was barren and lifeless, much of the day. Thus my days roll away, with but little done for God; and this is my burden.

Tuesday, December 6. I was perplexed to see the vanity and levity of professed Christians: but I spent the evening with a Christian friend, that was able to sympathize with me in my spiritual conflicts.

Thursday, December 8. My mind was lost with different affections. I was looking round in the world, to see if there was not some happiness to be derived

\* *The commissioners had directed him to spend much time this winter with Mr. Sergeant, to learn the language of the Indians; which necessitated him very often to ride, backwards and forwards, twenty miles through the uninhabited woods between Stockbridge and Kaunaumeeck. This many times exposed him to extreme hardship in the severe season of the winter.*

derived from it. God, and some objects in the world, seemed each to invite my heart; and my soul seemed to be distracted between them. I have not been so beset for a long time; with relation to some objects which I thought myself most dead to. But while I was desiring to please myself with any thing below, sorrow, and perplexity, attended the first motions of desire.—I found no peace, or deliverance from this distraction, till I found access to the throne of grace; and as soon as I had any sense of God, the allurements of the world vanished. But my soul mourned over my folly, that I should desire any pleasure, but in God. God forgive my spiritual idolatry!

Thursday, December 22. I spent this day alone in fasting and prayer, and reading in God's word the exercises and deliverances of his children. I had realizing apprehensions of divine power, grace, and holiness; and also of the unchangeableness of God, that he is the same as he was when he delivered his saints of old out of tribulation. My soul was sundry times in prayer enlarged for God's church and people. O that Zion might become the "joy of the whole earth!"

Monday, December 26. I rode down to Stockbridge, but was very much fatigued with my journey, wherein I underwent great hardship: being much exposed and very wet by falling into a river. I spent the day and evening without much sense of divine things; but perplexed with wandering thoughts.

Thursday, December 29. I spent the day mainly in conversing with friends; yet enjoyed little satisfaction, because I could find but few disposed to converse of heavenly things. Alas, what are the things of this world, to afford satisfaction to the soul!—I blessed God for retirement, and that I am not always exposed to company. O that I could live "in the secret of God's presence!"

Friday, December 30. I was in a solemn devout frame, and wondered that earth, with all its charms, should ever allure me in the least degree. O that I could always realize the being and holiness of God!

Saturday, December 31. I rode from Stockbridge home: the air was clear and calm, but as cold as ever I felt it. I was in great danger of perishing by the extremity of the season.

Lord's day, January 1, 1743-4. Of a truth God has been gracious to me the past year, though he has caused me to pass through many sorrows; he has provided for me bountifully, so that I have been enabled, in about fifteen months past, to bestow to charitable uses about an *hundred pounds*. Blessed be the Lord, that he has so far used me as *his steward*, to distribute a *portion of his goods*. May I always remember, that all I have comes from God. Blessed be the Lord, that has carried me through all the toils, fatigues, and hardships of the year past. O that I could begin this year *with God*, and spend the whole of it to *his glory*, either in life or death!

Tuesday, January 3. My time passes away so swiftly, that I am astonished when I reflect how little I do in it. My state of solitude does not make the hours hang heavy upon my hands. O what reason of thankfulness have I on account of this retirement! I do not, and it seems I cannot, lead a *Christian* life when I am abroad, and cannot spend time in devotion, Christian conversation, and meditation. Those weeks that I am obliged to be from home, in order to learn the Indian tongue, are mostly spent in barrenness; and I feel myself a stranger at the throne of grace. When I return home, and give myself to meditation, prayer, and fasting, a new scene opens, and my soul longs for mortification, self-denial, humility, and divorcement from all the things of the world.

Wednesday, January 4. Time appeared a *moment*, life a *vapour*, and all its enjoyments as *empty bubbles*, and fleeting blasts of wind.

Friday, January 6. Feeling my extreme weakness, and want of grace, I set apart this day for fasting and prayer, neither eating nor drinking from evening to evening. And my soul intensely longed, that the dreadful spots and stains of sin may be washed

washed away. My mind was greatly fixed on divine things; my resolutions for a life of mortification, continual watchfulness, self-denial, seriousness, and devotion to God, were strong and fixed; my desires ardent and intense; my conscience tender, and afraid of every appearance of evil. My soul was grieved with the reflection on my past levity, and want of resolution for God. I solemnly renewed my dedication of myself to God, and longed for grace to enable me always to keep covenant with him.

Saturday, January 14. This morning, I enjoyed a solemn season in prayer: my soul seemed enlarged, to pour out itself to God for grace, and for every blessing I wanted, for myself, my dear Christian friends, and for the church of God; and I was so enabled to *see him who is invisible*, that my soul *rested upon him* for the performance of every thing I asked. It was my happiness, to "continue instant in prayer." My soul was "strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might." I longed exceedingly for angelic holiness, and to have all my thoughts, at all times, employed in heavenly things. O how blessed is an heavenly temper! O how unspeakably blessed it is, to feel a measure of that rectitude, in which we were at first created!

[The next day he speaks of some glimpses he had of the divine glories; but, seem to be filled with fears lest he should return to a life of vanity, to please himself with some of the enjoyments of this world; and speaks of his being much troubled, that he should address immortal souls with no more ardency and desire of their salvation.]

Thursday, February 2. I spent this day in fasting and prayer, seeking the presence and assistance of God, that he would enable me to overcome all my corruptions and spiritual enemies.

Saturday, February 4. I enjoyed freedom and spiritual refreshment; was enabled to pray with fervency, and longing desires for Zion's prosperity, and my faith and hope seems to *take hold of God*, for the performance

formance of what I was enabled to plead for. Sanctification in myself, and the ingathering of God's elect, was all my desire; and the hope of its accomplishment, all my joy.

Monday, February 6. This morning, my soul again was strengthened in God, and found sweet repose in him; longing especially for the complete mortification of sensuality and pride, and for resignation to God's dispensations, at all times, as through grace I felt it at this time. And I did not desire deliverance from any difficulty that attends my circumstances, unless God was willing.

Tuesday, February 7. I was much engaged in meditation on the powers and affections of the godly soul in their pursuit of their beloved object: wrote something of the native language of spiritual sensation, in its soft and tender whispers; declaring, that it now "feels and tastes that the Lord is gracious;" that he is the supreme good, the only satisfying happiness; that he is a complete, sufficient, and Almighty portion: saying,

*"Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire besides thee. O, I feel it is heaven to please him, and to be just what he would have me to be! O that my soul were holy, as he is holy! O that it were pure, even as Christ is pure; and perfect, as my Father in heaven is perfect! These, I feel, are the sweetest commands in God's book, comprising all others. And shall I break them! must I break them! am I under a necessity of it as long as I live in the world! O my soul, wo, wo is me that I am a sinner, because I grieve and offend this blessed God, who is infinite in goodness and grace! Oh methinks, if he would punish me for my sins, it would, it would not wound my heart so deep to offend him: but though I sin continually, yet he continually repeats his kindness to me! I could bear any suffering; but how can I bear to grieve and dishonour this blessed God! How shall I yield ten thousand times more honour to him? What shall I do to glorify this best of beings? O that I could consecrate myself, soul and  
body,*

body, to his service for ever; O that I could give up myself to him, so as never more to attempt to be my own, or to have any will or affections that are not perfectly conformed to him: But, alas, alas! I cannot be thus entirely devoted to God. O ye angels, do ye glorify him incessantly; and if possible, prostrate yourselves lower before the blessed King of Heaven? I long to bear a part with you; and, if it were possible, to help you. Oh, when we have done all that we can, to all eternity, we shall not be able to offer the ten thousandth part of the homage that the glorious God deserves!"

Thursday, February 9. I observed this day as a day of fasting and prayer, intreating of God to bestow upon me his blessing and grace; especially to enable me to live a life of mortification to the world, as well as of resignation and patience. I enjoyed a realizing sense of divine power and goodness in prayer; and was enabled to roll the burden of myself and friends, and of Zion, upon the goodness of God.

Friday, February 10. I was exceedingly oppressed with shame, grief, and fear, under a sense of my past folly. When God sets before me my past misconduct, especially any instances of *misguided zeal*, it sinks my soul into shame and confusion.—I have no confidence to hold up my face, even before my fellow-worms; but only when my soul confides in God, and I find the sweet temper of Christ, the spirit of humility, solemnity, and mortification, and resignation, alive in my soul.

Monday, February 13. I rode to Stockbridge, and had a more refreshing taste and relish of heavenly blessedness, than I have enjoyed for many months past. I have many times, of late, felt as ardent desires of holiness as ever; but not so much sense of the unspeakable pleasure of the enjoyments and employments of heaven. My soul longed to leave earth, and bear a part with angels in their celestial employments. My soul said, "Lord, it is good to be here;" and it appeared to me better to

die, than to lose the relish of these heavenly delights.

Wednesday, February 22. I had as clear a sense of the pollution of my nature, as ever I remember to have had in my life. I then appeared to myself inexpressibly loathsome and defiled; sins of childhood, of early youth, and such follies as I had not thought of for years together, came fresh to my view, as if committed but yesterday. Yet I was supported under my burdens; and found it was sweet and comfortable to lean on God.

Friday, March 2. I never felt so much love to my enemies, (though at that time I found such a disposition, that I scarce knew how to think as any such thing as enmity lodged in my soul; it seemed as if all the world must needs be friends;) and never prayed with more freedom and delight, for myself, or dearest friend, than I did now for them.

Saturday, March 3. I spent an hour in prayer, with great intenseness and freedom, and with the most soft and tender affection towards mankind. I longed that those who I have reason to think owe me ill-will, might be eternally happy: it seemed refreshing, to think of meeting them in heaven, how much soever they had injured me on earth: I had no disposition to insist upon any confession from them, in order to reconciliation, and the exercise of love and kindness to them. O it is an emblem of heaven, to love all the world with a love of kindness, forgiveness, and benevolence; to feel our souls sedate, mild, and meek; to be void of all evil surmising and suspicions, and scarce able to think evil of any man upon any occasion; to find our hearts, simple, open, and free, to those that look upon us with a different eye.

Lord's day, March 4. I enjoyed the same intenseness in prayer as yesterday, though not in so great a degree: felt the same spirit of love, universal benevolence, forgiveness, humility, resignation, mortification to the world, and composure of mind, as then. "My soul rested in God;" and I found, I  
wanted

wanted no other refuge or friend. While my soul thus trusts in God, all things seem to be at peace with me, even the stones of the earth: but when I cannot apprehend and confide in God, all things appear with a different aspect.

Saturday, March 10. I felt exceeding dead to the world, and all its enjoyments: I was ready to give up life and all its comforts, as soon as called to it; and yet then had as much comfort of life as almost ever I had. Life itself appeared but an empty bubble; the riches, honours, and enjoyments of it extremely tasteless. I longed to be perpetually and entirely *crucified* to all things here below. My soul was sweetly resigned to God's disposal of me, in every regard; and I saw, there had nothing happened to me but what was best for me. I confided in God, that he would "never leave me," though I should "walk through the valley of the shadow of death." It was "my meat and drink to be holy, to live to the Lord, and die to the Lord." And I then enjoyed such an heaven, as far exceeded the most sublime conceptions of an unregenerate soul; and even unspeakably beyond what I myself could conceive at another time. I did not wonder, that Peter said, "Lord it is good to be here," when thus refreshed with divine glories. My soul was full of love and tenderness in the duty of intercession; especially of sweet affection to some godly ministers. I prayed earnestly for those I have reason to fear are my enemies; and could not have spoken a word of bitterness, or entertained a bitter thought, against the vilest man living. I had a sense of my own great unworthiness. My soul seemed to breathe forth love and praise to God afresh, when I thought he would let his children love and receive me as one of their brethren and fellow-citizens: and when I thought of their treating me in that manner, I longed to lie at their feet; and could think of no way to express the sincerity and simplicity of my love and esteem of them, as being much better than myself. —I longed to get on my knees, and ask forgiveness  
of

of every body that ever had seen any thing amiss in my past conduct, especially in my *religious zeal*.

Lord's day, March 11. I preached from the parable of the *sower*, had some freedom, affection, and fervency in addressing my poor people; longing that God should take hold of their hearts, and make them spiritually alive. And indeed I had so much to say to them, that I knew not how to leave off speaking.\*

Monday, March 12. My spirit was full of quietness, and love to mankind; and I longed that peace should reign on the earth: I was grieved at the very thoughts of a *fiery, angry, and intemperate* zeal in religion; mourned over my past follies; and confided in God for strength and grace sufficient for my future work and trials.—Spent the day mainly in hard labour, making preparation for my intended journey.

Tuesday, March 13. I enjoyed some freedom and fervency, intreating that the divine presence might attend me in *every place* where my business might lead me; and had a particular reference to the trials that I apprehended I might be more eminently exposed to in particular places.

Wednesday, March 14. I enjoyed some intenseness of soul in prayer, repeating my petitions for God's presence in every place, and besought the Lord that I might not be too much pleased with my dear friends and acquaintance. Near ten I set out on my journey, and before night came to Stockbridge.

Thursday, March 15. I rode down to Sheffield. Here I met a messenger from East-Hampton on Long-Island; who by the unanimous vote of that large town, was sent to invite me thither, in order to settle with that people; I knew not what to do: but endeavoured to commit the case to God.

[The

\* This was the last Sabbath that ever he performed public service at Kannaumeeck, and these the last sermons that ever he preached there.

[The two next days, he went no farther than Salisbury, being much hindered by the rain. When he came there, he was much indisposed.—He speaks of comfortable and profitable conversation with Christian friends, on these days.]

Lord's day, March 18. [At Salisbury] I was exceeding weak and faint, so that I could scarce walk : but God was pleased to afford me much freedom, clearness, and fervency in preaching.—Here another messenger met me, and informed me of the vote of another congregation, to give me an invitation to come among them. I was something exercised in mind with a burden of care. O that God would “ send forth faithful labourers into his harvest !”

[After this, he went forward on his journey towards New-York and New-Jersey : in which he proceeded slowly ; performing his journey under great bodily indisposition. However, he preached several times by the way, in which he had considerable assistance : He speaks of comfort in conversation with Christian friends ; but yet complains of a decline of life, or vivacity in religion, by means of his constant removal from place to place, and want of retirement. He came to New-York on Wednesday, March 28, and to Elisabeth-Town on the Saturday following, where it seems he waited till the commissioners came together.]

Thursday, April 5. I attended on the commissioners in their meeting,\* and resolved to go on still with the Indian affair, if divine providence permitted;

*\*The Indians at Kaunaumeek being but few in number, and Mr. Brainerd having now been labouring among them about a year, and having prevailed upon them to be willing to leave Kaunaumeek, and remove to Stockbridge, to live constantly under Mr. Sergeant's ministry ; he thought he might now do more service for Christ among the Indians elsewhere : and therefore went this journey to New-Jersey to lay the matter before the commissioners ; who met at Elisabeth-Town, on this occasion, and determined that he should forthwith leave Kaunaumeek, and go to the Delaware Indians.*

ed; although I had before felt some inclination to go to East-Hampton.†

[After this, he continued two or three days in the Jerseys, very ill; and then returned to New-York; and from thence into New-England; and went to his native town of Haddam; where he arrived on Saturday, April 14.]

Tuesday, April 17. I found more of God's presence, than I have done any time in my late wearisome journey. Eternity appeared very near; my nature was very weak, and seemed ready to be dissolved; the sun declining, and the shadows of the evening drawing on apace. O I longed to fill up the remaining moments all for God! Though my body was so feeble, and wearied with preaching, and private conversation, yet I wanted to sit up all the night to do something for God. To God, the giver of these refreshments, be glory for ever and ever. [After

† By the invitations Mr. Brainerd had lately received, it appears that it was not from necessity, or for want of opportunities to settle in the ministry among the English, that he was determined to forsake all outward comforts, and to go and spend his life among the brutish savages. He had, just as he was leaving Kaunaumeeh, an earnest invitation to a settlement at East-Hampton on Long-Island, the fairest, pleasantest town on the whole island, and one of its largest and most wealthy parishes. The people there were unanimous in their desires to have him for their pastor, and for a long time continued in an earnest pursuit of it. Besides he had an invitation to Millington; which was near his native town, and in the midst of his friends. Nor did Mr. Brainerd chuse the business of a missionary, rather than accept of those invitations, because he was unacquainted with the difficulties and sufferings which attended such a service: for he had had experience of these difficulties in summer and winter: having spent about a twelvemonth in a lonely desert among these savages, where he had gone through extreme hardships, a train of outward and inward sorrows. Notwithstanding all these things, he chose still to go on; and that although the place he was now going to, was at a much greater distance from most of his friends, acquaintance, and native land.

[After this, he visited several ministers in Connecticut; and then travelled towards Kaunaameek, and came to Mr. Sergeant's at Stockbridge, Thursday, April 26.]

Friday and Saturday, April 27, and 28. I spent some time in discoursing with my people, (who were now moved down from their own place to Mr. Sergeant's,) and found them very glad to see me returned.

Monday, April 30. I rode to Kaunaameek, but was extremely ill; and did not enjoy the comfort I hoped for in my own house.

Tuesday, May 1. Having received new orders to go to the Indians in Delaware river in Pennsylvania, and many people here being mostly removed to Mr. Sergeant's, I this day took all my clothes, books, &c. and disposed of them, and set out for Delaware river: but made it my way to return to Mr. Sergeant's; which I did this day, just at night. I rode several hours in the rain through the howling wilderness, although I was so disordered in body, that little or nothing but blood came from me.

Tuesday, May 8. I spent much of my time, while riding, in prayer, that God would go with me to Delaware. My heart sometimes was ready to sink with the thoughts of my work, and going alone in the wilderness, I knew not where: but still it was comfortable, to think, that others of God's children had "wandered about in caves and dens of the earth:" and Abraham, when he was called to go forth, "went out, not knowing whither he went."

[The next day, he went forward on his journey; crossed Hudson's river, and went to Goshen in the Highlands; and so travelled across the woods, from Hudson's river to Delaware, about an hundred miles, through a desolate and hideous country, above New-Jersey; where were very few settlements: in which journey he suffered much fatigue and hardship. He visited some Indians in the way,† and discoursed with them

† See Mr. Brainerd's Narrative, in a letter to Mr. Pemberton, at the end of his ordination sermon,--page 32, 33.

them concerning Christianity, but was melancholy and disconsolate, being alone in a strange wilderness. On Saturday, he came to a settlement of Irish and Dutch people, about twelve miles above the Forks of Delaware.]

On May 10th. I met with a number of Indians in a place called Minnissinks, about an hundred and forty miles from Kaunaumeeck, and directly in my way to Delaware river. With these Indians I spent some time, and first addressed their *king* in a friendly manner; and after some discourse, I told him I had a desire to instruct them in *Christianity*. At which he laughed, turned his back upon me, and went away. I then addressed another *principal* man in the same manner, who said he was willing to hear me. After some time, I followed the *king* into his house, and renewed my discourse to him: but he declined talking, and left the affair to another, who appeared to be a rational man. He talked very warmly near a quarter of an hour, and inquired why I desired the Indians to become *Christians*, seeing the Christians were so much worse than the Indians. The Christians, he said, would lie, steal, and drink, worse than the Indians. It was *they* first taught the Indians to be drunk; and *they* stole from one another, to that degree, that their rulers were obliged to hang them for it, and that was not sufficient to deter others from the like practice. But the Indians, he added, were none of them ever hanged for stealing, and yet they did not steal half so much; and he supposed that if the Indians should become Christians, they then would be as bad as these. He added, they would live as their *fathers* lived, and go where their *fathers* were when they died. I then freely owned, lamented, and joined with him in condemning the ill conduct of some who are called *Christians*; told him, these were not *Christians* in heart; that I hated such wicked practices, and did not desire the Indians to become such as these.—And when he appeared calmer, I asked him if he was willing that I should come and see them again: he replied, he should be willing to see me again,

again, as a *friend*, if I would not desire them to become *Christians*.—I then bid them farewell, and prosecuted my journey towards Delaware. And May 13th I arrived at a place called by the Indians, Sak-hauwotung, within the Forks of Delaware in Pennsylvania.

Here also, when I came to the Indians, I saluted their king, in a manner I thought most engaging: And soon after informed him of my desire to instruct them in the *Christian religion*. After he had consulted a few minutes with two or three old men, he told me, he was willing to hear. I then preached to those few that were present; who appeared very attentive. And the king in particular seemed both to wonder, and at the same time to be well pleased with what I taught them, respecting the divine being. And since that time he has ever shewn himself friendly to me, giving me free liberty to preach in his house, whenever I think fit.—Here therefore I spent the greater part of the summer, preaching usually in the king's house.

The number of Indians in this place is but small; most of those that formerly belonged here, are removed farther back in the country. There are not more than ten houses hereabouts, that continue to be inhabited; and some of these are several miles distant from others, which makes it difficult for the Indians to meet together so frequently as could be desired.

When I first began to preach here, the number of *hearers* was very small; often not exceeding twenty or twenty-five persons: but towards the latter part of the summer, their number increased, so that I have frequently had forty persons, or more, at once: and often the most of those belonging to those parts.

Lord's day, May 13. I rose early; felt very poorly after my long journey, and after being wet and fatigued. I have scarce ever seen such a gloomy morning in my life; there appeared to be no *Sabbath*; the children were all at play; I a stranger in the wilderness, and knew not where to go; and all circumstances seemed to conspire to render my affairs

G

dark

dark and discouraging. I mourned after the presence of God, and seemed like a creature banished from his sight! Yet he was pleased to support my sinking soul, amidst all my sorrows; so that I never entertained any thought of quitting my business among the poor Indians; but was comforted, to think, that death would ere long set me free from these distresses.—I rode about three or four miles to the Irish people, where I found some that appeared sober and concerned about religion. My heart then began to be a little encouraged: I went and preached, first to the Irish, and then to the Indians: and in the evening, was a little comforted; my soul seemed to rest on God, and take courage. O that the Lord would be my support and comforter in an evil world!

Monday, May 14. I felt myself loose from all the world; all appeared "vanity and vexation of spirit." I seemed lonesome, as if I was banished from all mankind, and bereaved of all that is called pleasurable in the world; but appeared to myself so vile and unworthy, it seemed fitter for me to be here than any where.

Thursday, May 17. I was greatly distressed with a sense of my vileness; appearing to myself too bad to walk on God's earth. God was pleased to let me see my inward pollution to such a degree, that I almost despaired of being made holy. In the afternoon I met with the Indians, according to appointment, and preached to them. And while riding to them, my soul seemed to confide in God; and afterwards had some enlargement in prayer: vital piety and holiness appeared sweet to me, and I longed for the perfection of it.

Lord's day, May 20. I preached twice to the poor Indians, and enjoyed some freedom in speaking. My soul longed for assistance from above, all the while; for I saw I had no strength for that work. Afterwards I preached to the Irish people; and several seemed much concerned, with whom I discoursed afterwards with freedom and power. Blessed be God for any assistance to an unworthy worm.

Lord's

Lord's day, May 27. I visited my Indians in the morning, and attending upon a *funeral* among them, was affected to see their *Heathenish practices*. O that they might be "turned from darkness to light!" Afterwards I got a considerable number of them together, and preached to them; and observed them very attentive. I then preached to the white people, and several seemed much concerned; especially one who had been educated a Roman catholic. Blessed be the Lord for any help.

Monday, June 11. This day the *presbytery* met at Newark, in order to my *ordination*. I was very weak and disordered in body; yet endeavoured to repose my confidence in God. At three in the afternoon I preached my probation-sermon, from Acts xxvi. 17, 18. being a text given me for that end. Afterwards I passed an examination before the *presbytery*. My mind was burdened with the greatness of that charge I was about to take upon me: so that I could not sleep this night, though very weary and in great need of rest.

Tuesday, June 12. I was this morning further examined, respecting my experimental acquaintance with Christianity. At ten o'clock my *ordination* was attended; the sermon preached by the Reverend Mr. Pemberton. At this time I was affected with a sense of the important trust committed to me; yet was composed, and solemn, without distraction: and I then (as many times before) gave myself up to God, to be for him, and not for another. O that I might always be engaged in the service of God, and duly remember the solemn charge I have received, in the presence of God, angels, and men.

## P A R T IV.

*From his ordination, 'till he began to preach to the Indians  
at Crofweekfung.*

**T**HURSDAY, June 14. I wondered, that God should open the hearts of any to treat me with kindness: and saw myself to be unworthy of any favour, from God or men. I had much pain in my head; however determined to set out on my journey towards Delaware; but in the afternoon my pain increased, so that I was obliged to take to my bed; and the night following, was greatly distressed with pain and sickness, and almost bereaved of the exercise of reason. On Saturday I was something relieved; but unable to walk 'till the Monday following. I often admired the goodness of God, that he did not suffer me to proceed on my journey from this place where I was so tenderly used, and to be sick by the way among strangers.—God is very gracious to me, both in health and sickness, and intermingles much mercy with all my afflictions.

[On Tuesday, June 19. He set out, and in three days reached his place, near the forks of Delaware.]

Lord's day, June 24. I was scarce able to walk: however, visited my Indians, and took much pains to instruct them. But my mind was much burdened with the weight of my work. My whole dependence was on God; who alone I saw could make them willing to receive instruction. My heart was much engaged in prayer, sending up silent requests to God, even while I was speaking to them. O that I could always go in the strength of the Lord!

Monday, June 25. To an eye of reason every thing that respects the conversion of the Heathen is as dark as midnight; and yet I cannot but hope in God, for the accomplishment of something glorious among them. My soul longed much for the advancement

vancement of of the Redeemer's kingdom on earth, and was very fearful lest I should admit some vain thought, and so lose the sense I had of divine things. O for an abiding heavenly temper!

Tuesday, June 26. I was much discouraged with the extreme difficulty of the work; yet God supported me; and though the work of their conversion appeared "impossible with man, yet with God" I saw "all things were possible." My faith was much strengthened, by observing the wonderful assistance God afforded his servants Nehemiah and Ezra, in reforming his people, and re-establishing his ancient church. I was much assisted in prayer, especially for the poor Heathen, and those of my own charge: and hoped that God would bow the heavens and come down for their salvation. It seemed to me, there could be no impediment sufficient to obstruct that glorious work, seeing the living God, as I strongly hoped, was engaged for it. I continued solemnly lifting up my heart to God, that I might be more mortified to this world, that my soul might be taken up continually in the advancement of Christ's kingdom: and longed that God would purge me more, that I might be as a chosen vessel to bear his name among the Heathens.

Wednesday, June 27. In the afternoon, I rode several miles to see if I could procure any lands for the poor Indians, that they might live together, and be under better advantages for instruction. While I was riding, I had a deep sense of the Difficulty of my work; and my soul relied wholly upon God for success, in the diligent and faithful use of means. I saw with the greatest certainty, that *the arm of the Lord* must be *revealed*, for the help of these poor Heathen, if ever they were delivered from the bondage of the powers of darkness.

Thursday, June 28. Towards noon I rode up to the Indians; and while going, my heart went up to God in prayer for them; I could freely tell God, he knew the cause was not mine, but his own, and it would be for his own glory to convert the poor

Indians: and blessed be God, I felt no desire of honour from the world, as the instrument of it.

Saturday, June 30. My soul was much solemnized in reading God's word; especially the ninth chapter of Daniel. I saw how God had called out his servants to prayer, and made them wrestle with him, when he designed to bestow any great mercy on his church. And I was ashamed of myself, to think of my dulness and inactivity, when there seemed to be so much to do for the upbuilding of Zion. Oh, how does Zion lie waste! I longed, that the church of God might be enlarged: and was enabled to pray, in faith; my soul seemed sensibly to confide in God, and was enabled to wrestle with him. Afterwards, I walked abroad to a place of sweet retirement, and enjoyed assistance in prayer again: had a sense of my great need of divine help, and felt my soul sensibly depend on God.

Lord's day, July 1. After I came to the Indians, my mind was confused; and I felt nothing of that sweet reliance on God, that my soul has been comforted with in days past. In the afternoon I felt still barren, when I began to preach; I seemed to myself to know nothing, and to have nothing to say to the Indians; but soon after, I found in myself a spirit of love, and warmth, and power, to address the poor Indians; and God helped me to plead with them, to "turn from all the vanities of the Heathen, to the living God:" I am persuaded, the Lord touched their consciences; for I never saw such attention in them before. When I came away, I spent the whole time I was riding, in prayer and praise to God. And after I had rode two miles, it came into my mind to dedicate myself to God again; which I did with great solemnity, and unspeakable satisfaction; especially giving up myself to him anew in the work of the ministry. And this I did without any exception or reserve; not in the least shrinking back from any difficulties, that might attend this blessed work. I was most free, chearful, and full in this dedication of myself. My whole  
soul

soul cried, "Lord, to thee I dedicate myself: O accept of me, and let me be thine for ever. Lord, I desire nothing else; I desire nothing more. O come, come Lord, accept a poor worm. *Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth, that I desire besides thee.*" After this, I was enabled to praise God with my whole soul, that he had enabled me to devote and consecrate all my powers to him in this solemn manner. My heart rejoiced in my particular work as a *missionary*; rejoiced in my necessity of self-denial; and still continued to give up myself to God, and implore mercy of him; praying incessantly, every moment, with sweet fervency. My nature being very weak of late, was now considerably overcome: my fingers grew very feeble, and numb, so that I could scarcely stretch them out strait; and when lighted from my horse, I could hardly walk, my joints seeming all to be loosened. But I felt abundant *strength in the inner man*. I preached to the white people, and God helped me much. Sundry of my poor Indians were so moved as to come to meeting also; and one appeared much concerned.

Tuesday, July 3. This morning, I was enabled to pray under a feeling sense of my need of help, to plead with God a considerable time. Truly God is good to me. But my soul was grieved at my infirmity and barrenness, and longed to be more engaged for God. O it is sweet to be *the Lord's*, to be sensibly devoted to him! What a blessed portion is God! How glorious, how lovely! O my soul longed to employ my time wholly for God!—In the evening, I was enabled again to wrestle with God in prayer with fervency, to maintain a self-diffident and watchful frame of spirit, jealous and afraid lest I should admit carelessness or self-confidence.

Friday, July 6. I am, of late, most of all concerned for ministerial qualifications, and the conversion of the Heathen: last year, I longed to be prepared for a world of glory, and speedily to depart out of this world; but of late my chief concern is for the conversion

sion of the Heathen; and for that end, I long to live. But blessed be God, I have less desire to live for any of the pleasures of the world, than ever I had: I long and love to be a pilgrim; and want grace to imitate the life, labours, and sufferings of St. Paul among the heathen. And when I long for holiness now, it is chiefly, that thereby I may become an "able minister of the New Testament," especially to the Heathen. I spent two hours this morning in reading and prayer; and was in a watchful tender frame, afraid of every thing that might cool my affections, and draw away my heart from God.

Lord's day, July 8. I was watchful, tender, and jealous of my own heart, lest I should admit carelessness and vain thoughts, and grieve the blessed Spirit, so that he should withdraw his sweet, kind, and tender influences. I longed to "depart, and be with Christ," more than at any time of late. My soul was exceedingly united to the saints of antient times, as well as those now living; especially my soul melted for the society of Elijah and Elisha.

Wednesday, July 11. My soul was diffident, watchful, and tender, lest I should offend my blessed Friend, in thought or behaviour. I confided in, and leaned upon the blessed God. Oh, what need did I see myself to stand in of God at all times, to assist me and lead me!

Saturday, July 21. Towards night my burden respecting my work among the Indians began to increase much; and was aggravated by hearing sundry things that looked very discouraging, in particular, that they intended to meet together the next day for an idolatrous feast and dance. Then I began to be in anguish: I thought I must in conscience go and endeavour to break them up; and knew not how to attempt such a thing. However, I withdrew to prayer, hoping for strength from above. And in prayer I was exceedingly enlarged, and my soul was much drawn out. I pleaded with so much earnestness and importunity, that when I rose from my knees, I could scarcely walk straight, my joints were  
loosed.

roofed, the sweat ran down my face and body, and nature seemed as if it would dissolve. I knew they were met together to worship devils, and not God, and this made me cry earnestly, that God would appear, and help me in my attempts to break up this idolatrous meeting. My soul pleaded long; and I thought God would go with me to vindicate his own cause: And thus I spent the evening, praying incessantly that I might not be self-dependent, but have my whole dependence upon God. What I passed through was inexpressible. All things here below vanished; and there appeared to be nothing of any importance to me, but holiness of heart and life, and the conversion of the Heathen to God. All my cares, fears, and desires, which might be said to be of a worldly nature, disappeared; and were of little more importance than a puff of wind. I exceedingly longed, that God would get to himself a name among the Heathen; and I appealed to him with the greatest freedom, that he knew I "preferred him above my chief joy." Indeed, I had no notion of joy from this world; I cared not where or how I lived, or what hardships I went through, so that I could but gain souls to Christ.

Lord's day, July 22. When I waked, my soul was burdened with what seemed to be before me: I cried to God, before I could get out of my bed: as soon as I was dressed, I withdrew into the woods, to pour out my soul to him for assistance; and did with unspeakable freedom give up myself afresh to God, for life or death, for all hardships he should call me to among the Heathen; and felt as if nothing could discourage me from this blessed work. I had a strong hope, that God would "bow the heavens and come down," and do some marvellous work among the Heathen. And when I was riding to the Indians, my heart was continually going up to God; and hoping, that God would make this the day of his power and grace amongst the poor Indians. When I came to them, I found them engaged in their frolic; but through divine goodness I got them to break  
up

up and attend to my preaching: yet still there appeared nothing of the special power of God among them. I preached again to them in the afternoon; and observed they were more sober than before; but still saw nothing special among them; from whence Satan took occasion to buffet me with these cursed suggestions, There is no God, or if there be, he is not able to convert the Indians, before they have more knowledge. I was very weak and weary, and my soul borne down with perplexity; but was determined still to wait upon God.

Tuesday, July 24. I rode over a hideous mountain, to a number of Indians, at a place called Kauksfauchung, more than thirty miles westward from the place where I usually preach. I found about thirty persons, and proposed my desire of preaching to them: they readily complied, and I preached to them only twice, they being just then removing from this place, to Susquahannah-river.

While I was preaching, they appeared sober, and attentive: and were somewhat surprised, having never before heard of these things. There were two or three, who suspected that I had some ill design upon them; and urged, that the white people had abused them, and taken their lands from them, and therefore they had no reason to think that they were concerned for their happiness; but, on the contrary, that they designed to make them slaves, or get them on board their vessels, and make them fight with the people over the water, (as they expressed it,) meaning the French and Spaniards. However, the most of them appeared very friendly, and told me, they were then going home to Susquahannah, and desired I would make them a visit there, and manifested a considerable desire of instruction.

This invitation gave me some encouragement in my great work; and made me hope, that God designed to "open an effectual door to me" for spreading the gospel among the poor Heathen farther westward.

[From

[From these Indians he returned to the Irish settlement, and there preached to a numerous congregation: where was a considerable appearance of awakening. Thursday, he returned home, exceedingly fatigued and spent; still in the same mortification to the world, and solicitous for the advancement of Christ's kingdom: and on this day he says: "I have felt, this week, more of the spirit of a *pilgrim on earth*, than ever before; and yet so desirous to see Zion's prosperity, that I was not so willing to leave this scene of sorrow as I used to be."—On the Sabbath, he was confined by illness, not able to go out to preach. He continued very ill all the week; and says, that "he thought he never before endured such a season of distressing weakness; and that his nature was so spent, that he could neither stand, sit, nor lie with any quiet; that he was exercised with extreme faintness and sickness at his stomach; and that his mind was as much disordered as his body, seeming to be stupid, and without all kind of affections; and yet perplexed, to think, that he lived for nothing, that precious time rolled away, and he could do nothing but trifle."—Concerning the next five days he writes thus, "On Lord's day, August 5, was still very poor. But though very weak, I visited and preached to the poor Indians twice, and was strengthened vastly beyond my expectations. And indeed, the Lord gave me freedom and fervency in addressing them: though I had not strength enough to stand, but was obliged to sit down the whole time. Towards night I was extremely weak, faint, sick, and full of pain. And I have continued much the same last week, through the most of this, (it being now Friday,) unable to engage in any business; frequently unable to pray in the family. I have neither strength to read, meditate, or pray: and this perplexes my mind. I seem like a man that has all his estate embarked in one small boat, unhappily going adrift, down a swift torrent. The poor owner stands on the shore, and looks, and laments his loss. But, alas! though my all seems to be adrift, and I stand

stand and see it, I dare not lament; for this sinks my spirits more, and aggravates my bodily disorders. O that God would pity my distressed state!"

The next day three weeks, his illness was not so extreme; he was in some degree capable of business he also had, for the most part, much inward assistance he often expresses great longings for the enlargement of Christ's kingdom: he speaks of his hope of this as all his delight and joy. He continues still to express his usual longings after holiness, and living to God and his sense of his own unworthiness: he several times speaks of his appearing to himself the vilest creature on earth; and once says, that he verily thought there were none of God's children who fell so far short of that holiness, and perfection in their obedience, which God requires.]

Saturday, September 1. I enjoyed some comfort and sweetness: and as my bodily strength was a little restored, so my soul seemed to be more engaged in the things of God.

Lord's day, September 2. I was enabled to speak to my poor Indians with much concern and fervency; and God enabled me to exercise faith in him while I was speaking to them. I perceived, that some of them were afraid to embrace *Christianity*, lest they should be enchanted and poisoned by the *powows*; but I bid a challenge to all these *powers of darkness*, to do their worst upon *me* first; I told my people, I was a *Christian*, and asked them why the *powows* did not bewitch and poison me? I scarcely ever felt more sensible of my own unworthiness, than in this: but I saw the honour of God was concerned; and I trusted to be preserved, for a testimony of the divine power and goodness, and of the truth of *Christianity*.

Wednesday, September 26. After a journey to New-England, I rode home to the Forks of Delaware. What reason have I to bless God, who has preserved me in riding more than four hundred and twenty miles. My health likewise is greatly recovered. O that I could dedicate my all to God!

Monday

Monday, October 1. I was engaged this day in making preparation for my journey to Susquahannah; and withdrew several times to plead for the divine presence to go with me to the poor Pagans. Towards night I rode about four miles, and met my brother Byram;\* who was come, at my desire, to be my companion to the Indians. I rejoiced to see him; and God made his conversation profitable to me. I saw him, as I thought, more dead to the world, its cares, and alluring objects, than I was: and this made me look within myself, and gave me a greater sense of my ingratitude, and misery.

Tuesday, October 2. I set out on my journey, in company with my dear brother Byram, and my interpreter, and two chief Indians from the Forks of Delaware. We travelled about twenty-five miles, and lodged in one of the last houses on our road; after which there was nothing but a hideous and howling *wilderness*.

Wednesday, October 3. We went on our way into the wilderness, and found far the most difficult and dangerous travelling, that ever any of us had seen; we had scarce any thing else but lofty mountains, deep valleys, and hideous rocks, to make our way through. However, I felt sweetness in divine things, and had my mind intensely engaged in meditation. Near night, my beast that I rode upon, hung one of her legs in the rocks, and fell down under me; but through divine goodness, I was not hurt. However, she broke her leg; and being near thirty miles from any house, I saw nothing that could be done to preserve her life, and so was obliged to kill her, and to prosecute my journey on foot. Just at dark, we kindled a fire, cut up a few bushes, and made a shelter over our heads, to save us from the frost, which was very hard; and committing ourselves to God, we lay down on the ground, and slept quietly.

[The next day, they went forward on their journey, and at night took up their lodging in the woods in like manner.]

Friday,

H

\* Minister at a place called Rockciticus, about forty miles from Mr. Brainerd's lodgings.

Friday, October 5. We arrived at Susquahannah-river, at a place called *Opeholhauptung*: found there twelve Indian houses: after I had saluted the king in a friendly manner, I told him my business, and that my desire was to teach them *Christianity*. After some consultation, the Indians gathered, and I preached to them. And when I had done, I asked, if they would hear me again. They replied, they would consider of it; and soon after sent me word, that they would immediately attend, if I would preach; which I did with much freedom. When I asked them again, whether they would hear me further, they replied, they would the next day. I was exceeding sensible of the impossibility of doing any thing for the poor Heathen without special assistance: and my soul rested on God, and left it to him, to do as he pleased in his own cause.

Saturday, October 6. I preached again to the Indians: and in the afternoon, visited them from house to house, and invited them to come and hear me again the next day, and put off their hunting design, till Monday. "This night, the Lord stood by me," to encourage and strengthen my soul: I spent more than an hour in secret retirement; and was enabled to "pour out my heart before God," for the increase of grace in my soul, for ministerial endowments, and for success among the poor Indians.

Monday, October 8. I visited the Indians with a design to take my leave, supposing they would go out a hunting early; but beyond my expectation and hope, they desired to hear me preach again. I gladly complied with their request, and endeavoured to answer their *objections* against *Christianity*. Then they went away; and we spent the afternoon in reading and prayer, intending to go homeward early the next day.

Tuesday, October 9. We rose about four, and commending ourselves to God by prayer, we set out homewards about five, and travelled till past six at night. We then made us a fire, and a shelter of barks, and so rested.—In the night, the wolves howled round us; but God preserved us.

Friday,

Friday, October 12. I came home to my lodging; where I poured out my soul to God, and endeavoured to bless him for his abundant goodness to me in my late journey. I scarce ever enjoyed more health; and God marvelously, and almost miraculously, supported me under the fatigues of the way, and travelling on foot. Blessed be the Lord, that preserves me in all my ways.

Lord's day, October 14. I was much confused and perplexed in my thoughts; and almost discouraged; thinking I should never be able to preach any more. However, I went to the place of public worship, lifting up my heart, and God was gracious to me, and helped me to plead with him for holiness, and to use strong arguments with him, drawn from the sufferings of Christ for this very end, that men might be made holy. Afterwards I was much assisted in preaching. I know not that God ever helped me to preach in a more close manner. Through the infinite goodness of God, I felt what I spake; and God enabled me to speak with uncommon clearness: and yet I was deeply sensible of my defects in preaching; blessed be the Lord for his mercy. In the evening I longed to be entirely alone, to bless God for help in extremity; and longed for great degrees of holiness, that I might shew my gratitude to God.

Tuesday, October 16. I felt a spirit of solemnity and watchfulness; and was afraid I should not live *to and upon* God: I longed for more intenseness and spirituality. In the evening I enjoyed sweet assistance in prayer, and thirsted and pleaded to be as holy as the blessed *angels*.

Friday, October 19. I had an abasing sense of my own unholiness; and felt my soul melt and mourn, that I had grieved a gracious God, who was still kind to me, notwithstanding all my unworthiness. My soul enjoyed a sweet season of sorrow, that I had wronged that blessed God, who was reconciled to me in his dear son. My soul was now tender, devout, and solemn: and I was afraid of nothing but sin; and afraid of that in every action and thought.

Wednesday, October 24. Near noon I rode to my people; spent some time, and prayed with them: felt the frame of a *pilgrim* on earth; longed much to leave this gloomy mansion; but yet found patience and resignation. As I returned home from the Indians, I spent the whole time in lifting up my heart to God.

In the evening I enjoyed a blessed season in prayer; was enabled to cry to God with a child-like spirit: enjoyed a sweet freedom in supplicating for myself, and for my dear friends; and longed to be as lively in God's service as the angels.

Friday, October 26. In the morning my soul was melted with a sense of divine goodness to such a vile worm: I delighted to lean upon God, and place my whole trust in him: my soul was exceedingly grieved for sin, and prized and longed after holiness; it wounded my heart deeply, yet sweetly, to think how I had abused a kind God. I longed to be perfectly holy, that I might not grieve a gracious God: I longed for holiness more for this end, than for my happiness sake: and yet this was my greatest happiness, never more to dishonour, but always to glorify the blessed God.

Wednesday, October 31. I was sensible of my barrenness: my soul failed when I remembered the fervency I had enjoyed. Oh (I thought) if I could but be spiritual, warm, heavenly-minded, and affectionately breathing after God, this would be better than life to me! My soul longed exceedingly for death, to be loosed from this dulness, and made ever active in the service of God. I seemed to live for nothing, and to do no good: and Oh, the burden of such a life! Oh, death, death, my kind friend, hasten and deliver me from dull mortality, and make me spiritual and vigorous to eternity!

Thursday, November 1. I felt life, and longings after God; I longed to be always solemn, devout, and heavenly-minded; and was afraid to leave off praying, lest I should again lose a sense of the sweet things of God.

Friday,

Friday, November 2. I was exercised sorely with some things that I thought myself most of all freed from. And thus I have ever found it, when I have thought the battle was over, and the conquest was gained, and so let down my watch, the enemy has risen up and done me the greatest Injury.

[The next day he set out on a journey to New-York, to meet the Presbytery there; and was gone from home more than a fortnight. He seemed to enter on this journey with great reluctance; fearing it would cool his religious affections. But yet, in his journey he had special seasons of God's gracious presence. He was greatly fatigued therein by cold and storms: and when he returned from New-York to New-Jersey, was very ill for some time.]

Wednesday, November 21. I rode from Newark to Rockciticous in the cold, and was almost overcome with it. But I enjoyed sweetness in conversation with Mr. Jones: my soul loves the people of God, and especially the ministers, who feel the same trials that I do.

Thursday, November 22. I came on my way to Delaware river, tho' much disordered with a cold and pain in my head. About six at night, I lost my way in the wilderness, and wandered over rocks and mountains, down hideous steeps, through swamps, and most dreadful and dangerous places; and the night being dark, I was greatly exposed: I was much pinched with cold, and distressed with an extreme pain in my head, attended with sickness at my stomach; so that every step I took was distressing to me. I had little hope, but that I must lie in the woods all night. But about nine o'clock I found a house, and was kindly entertained. Thus I have frequently been exposed: but God has hitherto preserved me; blessed be his name. Such fatigues and hardships serve to wean me from the earth; and, will make heaven the sweeter. Formerly, when I was thus exposed, I was ready to please myself with the thoughts of a comfortable house, a warm fire, and other outward comforts.

but now these have less place in my heart, (through the grace of God), and my eye is more to God for comfort. In this world I expect tribulation; and it does not now appear strange to me; I do not in seasons of difficulty flatter myself that it will be better hereafter; but rather think, how much worse it might be; how much greater trials others of God's children have endured; and how much greater are yet perhaps reserved for me. Blessed be God, that he makes the thoughts of my journey's-end a great comfort to me, under my sharpest trials; and scarce ever lets these thoughts be attended with terror; but frequently with great joy.

[Within the next twelve days he spent much time in hard labour, with others, to make for himself a little cottage, to live in by himself.]

Thursday, December 6. Having now a happy opportunity of being retired in a house of my own; I set apart this day for secret prayer and fasting, to implore the blessing of God on myself, on my poor people, on my friends, and on the church of God. And now God was pleased to give me a discovery of *the plague of my own heart*, more affecting than I have of late had. And especially I saw my sinfulness in this, that when God had *withdrawn* himself, instead of living and dying in *pursuit* of him, I have been disposed to one of these two things, either to yield an unbecoming respect to some *earthly* objects, as if happiness were to be derived from them; or to be secretly *froward* and impatient, and unsuitably desirous of *death*. That which often drove me to this impatient desire of death, was a despair of doing any good in life. But now God made me sensible of my sin, and enabled me to cry to him for *forgiveness*. Yet this was not all I wanted; for my soul appeared exceedingly polluted: and I wanted to be purified "by the blood of sprinkling that cleanseth from all sin." And this I was enabled to pray for in faith. I enjoyed much more intenseness, fervency, and spirituality than I expected; God was better to me than my fears. I was enabled to persevere in prayer 'till

till the evening: I saw so much need of divine help, in every respect, that I knew not how to leave off, and had forgot that I needed food.

Lord's day, December 9. I preached, both parts of the day, at a place called *Greenwich*, about ten miles from my own house. In the first discourse I had scarce any warmth. In the intermission-season I got alone among the bushes, and cried to God being in anguish, that I could not address souls with more compassion and tender affection: which I saw I could not get of myself, any more than I could make a world. In the latter exercise, blessed be the Lord, I had some fervency, both in prayer and preaching; and in the application I was enabled to address precious souls with affection, tenderness, and importunity. The spirit of God was there; the effects were apparent, tears running down many cheeks.

Monday, December 10. I preached again: God enabled me to be in some degree faithful; I rode home in the evening, and blessed God for his goodness; and rejoiced, that so much of my work was done, and I so much nearer my reward.

Wednesday, December 12. I was very weak; but assisted in secret prayer, and enabled with sweetness to cry, "Come, Lord Jesus! come quickly." My soul "longed for God, for the living God." O how delightful it is, to pray under such influences! How much better than one's *necessary food*! I had at this time no disposition to eat, (though late in the morning;) for earthly food appeared wholly tasteless.—I visited and preached to the Indians, in the afternoon; but under much dejection. I found my *interpreter* under some concern for his soul; which was some comfort to me. I longed greatly for his conversion, poured out my soul to God for him; and was enabled, to leave all with God.

Thursday, December 13. I spent the day in fasting and prayer, to implore the divine blessing, more especially on my poor people; in particular for my *interpreter*, and three or four more under some concern

cern for their souls: but, in the evening it seemed as if I had need to pray for nothing so much as for the pardon of sins committed in the day past. The sin I had most sense of, were pride, and wandering thoughts. Yet after all my sorrows, I trust, this day and the excercises of it have been for my good; and taught me more of my weakness without Christ, than I knew before.

Lord's day, December 16. I was so overwhelmed with dejection, that I knew not how to live: I longed for death exceedingly: my soul was *sunk into deep waters*, and the *floods* were ready to *drown me*: I was so much oppressed, that my soul was in a kind of horror: I had no distrustful doubt about my own state; but would have cheerfully ventured (as far as I could know) into eternity. While I was going to preach to the Indians, my soul was in anguish; I despaired of doing any good. But at last I insisted on the evidence of Christianity from the *miracles* of Christ: and God helped me to make a close application to those that refused to believe. I was encouraged, to find, that God enabled me to be faithful once more. Then I went and preached to another company of them; but was very weary and faint. In the evening, I was something refreshed, and enabled to pray and praise God with composure and affection: I was now willing to live, and longed to do more for God, than my weak state of body would admit of. "I can do all things through Christ that strengthens me;" and I am willing to *spend* and *be spent* in his service.

Tuesday, December 18. I went to the Indians, and discoursed to them near an hour, and at last God helped me to speak with warmth. My *interpreter* also was amazingly assisted; and I doubt not but "the Spirit of God was upon him." And presently most of the grown persons were much affected, and the tears ran down their cheeks; and one *old man* (I suppose, an hundred years old) was so affected, that he wept, and seemed convinced of the importance of what I taught them. I staid with them

a considerable time, exhorting them; and came away, lifting up my heart to God, and encouraged my *interpreter* to "strive to enter in at the strait gate."

Thursday, January 5, 1744-5. Being sensible of the great want of the out pouring of God's Spirit, I spent this day in fasting and prayer, to seek so great a mercy for myself, and my poor people in particular, and for the church of God in general.

Friday, January 4. I rode up to the Indians, near noon; spent some time there under great disorder; my soul was *sunk down into deep waters*, and I was almost overwhelmed with melancholy.

Saturday, January 5. I was much disordered with pain in my head. I was distressed with a sense of my spiritual pollution, and ten thousand youthful, yea, and childish follies: all which appeared now fresh, and in a lively view, as if committed yesterday, and made my soul ashamed before God.

Wednesday, January 9. In the morning, God was pleased to remove that gloom which has of late oppressed my mind, and gave me freedom and sweetness in prayer. I was encouraged to plead for grace for myself, and mercy for my poor Indians; and was sweetly assisted in my intercessions with God for others. Those things that of late have appeared almost impossible now, not only possible, but easy. My soul so much delighted to continue instant in prayer, at this blessed season, that I had no desire for any *necessary food*: even dreaded leaving off praying at all, lest I should lose this spirituality, and this blessed thankfulness. I felt now quite willing to live, and undergo all trials that might remain for me in a world of sorrow; but still longed for heaven, that I might glorify God in a perfect manner.

Monday, January 14. I spent this day under a great degree of bodily weakness and disorder. It pains me, that I live so much of my time for nothing. I long to do much in a little time, and if it might be the Lord's will, to *finish my work* speedily in this tiresome world. I am sure, I do not desire to live for anything in this world; and through grace I am not  
afraid

afraid to look the *king of terrors* in the face: I know I shall be afraid, if God leaves me; and therefore think it always my duty to lay in for that solemn hour. But for a considerable time, my soul has rejoiced to think of death in its nearest approaches; and ever when I have been very weak, and seemed nearest eternity. "Not unto me, not unto me, but to God be the glory." I feel that which convinces me, that if God do not enable me to maintain a holy dependence upon him, death will be a terror, but a present, I must say, "I long to depart, and to be with Christ." When I am in a sweet resigned frame of soul, I am willing to tarry in a world of sorrow, I am willing to be from home as long as God sees fit; but when I want the influence of this temper, I am then apt to be impatient to be gone.—Oh when will the day appear, that I shall be perfect in holiness.

Wednesday and Thursday, January 16, 17. I spent most of the time in writing on a divine subject, and enjoyed freedom and assistance. O what reason have I to be thankful, that God ever helps me to labour and study for him! He does but *receive his own*, when I am enabled in any measure to praise him, labour for him, and live to him.

Lord's day, January 27. I had the greatest degree of inward anguish, that almost ever I endured: I was perfectly overwhelmed, and so confused, that after I began to discourse to the Indians, before I could finish a sentence, sometimes I forgot entirely what I was aiming at. This distressing gloom never went off the whole day: but was so far removed, that I was enabled to speak with some freedom to the Indians, at two of their settlements; and there was some appearance, of the presence of God with us. In the evening, the gloom continued still, till at family-prayer,\* when I was praying for the conversion of my

\*Though Mr. Brainerd now dwelt by himself in the little cottage, which he had built for his own use; yet that was near a family of white people with whom he had lived before, and with whom he still attended family-prayer.

my poor people; the cloud was scattered, so that I enjoyed sweetness and freedom, and conceived hopes that God designed mercy for them.

Lord's day, February 3. In the morning, I was somewhat relieved of that gloom, that my mind has of late been exercised with: and was enabled to pray with composure and comfort. But, however, I went to my Indians trembling; for my soul "remembered the wormwood and the gall" of Friday last; and I was greatly afraid I should be obliged again to drink of that *cup of trembling*, which was conceivably more bitter than death. But God was pleased to hear my cries, and to afford me great assistance; so that I felt peace in my soul; and was satisfied, that if not one of the Indians should be proved yet I should be accepted and rewarded as faithful; for I am persuaded, God enabled me to be so.

Monday, February 11. In the evening I was in the most solemn frame that I remember to have experienced: I know not that ever death appeared more real to me, or that ever I saw myself in the condition of a dead corpse, laid out, and dressed for lodging in the silent grave, so evidently as at this time. And yet I felt exceedingly comfortably; my mind was composed and calm, and *death* appeared *without a sting*. I never felt such an universal mortification to all created objects. Oh, how great and solemn a thing it appeared to die! How it lays the dearest honour in the dust! And how vain and fleeting did the riches, honours, and pleasures of the world appear! I could not, I dare not, so much think of any of them; for *death, death*, solemn (though not frightful) *death* appeared at the door. I could see myself laid out, and inclosed in my coffin, and put down into the cold grave, without error! I spent the evening in conversing with a Christian friend; and it was a comfortable evening to us both.—What are friends? What are comforts? What are sorrows? What are distresses?—"The time is short: it remains, that they that weep, be as though they wept not; and they which rejoice, as though

though they rejoiced not: for the fashion of this world passeth away. O come, Lord Jesus, come quickly.

Thursday, February 14. I spent the day in writing on a divine subject: enjoyed health, and freedom in my work: had a solemn sense of death; as I have indeed had every day this week: what I felt on Monday last has been abiding ever since.

Friday, February 15. I had a sweet sense of the free grace of the gospel: my soul was encouraged, warmed, and quickened, and my desires drawn out after God in prayer: being afraid of losing so sweet a guest as I then entertained. I longed to proclaim the grace I then meditated upon, to the world of sinners.—O how *quick* and *powerful* is the *word* of the blessed God!

Lord's day, February 17. I preached to the *white* people (my *interpreter* being absent) in the wilderness, upon the sunny side of a hill: I had a considerable assembly, consisting of people that lived (at least many of them) not less than thirty miles off. I discoursed to them, from John vii. 37. "Jesus stood and cried, saying, if any man thirst, &c. In the afternoon it pleased God to grant me great freedom and fervency in my discourse; and I was enabled to imitate the example of Christ, who *stood and cried*.—I think I was scarce ever enabled to offer the free grace of God to perishing sinners with more freedom and plainness. Oh that I could forever bless God for the mercy of this day, which answered me in the joy of my heart."

Lord's day, Feb. 24. My *interpreter* being absent I knew not how to perform my work among the Indians. However, I rode to the Indians, and got a Dutchman to interpret, though he was but poorly qualified. Afterwards I came and preached to a few white people from John vi. 67. O the free grace of Christ, that he seasonably minds his people of their danger of *backsliding*, and invites them to persevere in their adherence to himself! I saw that *backsliding* souls might return, and welcome, to him

*immediately*

*immediately*; without any thing to recommend them; notwithstanding all their former backslidings. And I felt solemn, devout, and sweet, resting on free grace for assistance, acceptance, and peace of conscience.

Wednesday, March 6. I spent most of the day in preparing for a journey to New-England, and some time in prayer, with a reference to my journey. I was afraid I should forsake the *fountain of living waters*, and attempt to derive satisfaction from *broken cisterns*, my dear friends and acquaintance, with whom I may meet in my journey. I looked to God to keep me from this *vainety* in special, as well as others. Towards night, I was visited by some friends, who discovered an affectionate regard to me, and seemed grieved that I was about to leave them; especially seeing I did not expect to make any considerable stay among them, if I should live to return from New-England\*. O how kind has God been to me! how has he raised up friends in every place, where his providence has called me!

[The next day, he set out on his journey; and it was above five weeks before he returned.—The special design of this journey was “To raise some money among Christian friends, in order to support a colleague with me in the wilderness, (I having now spent two years in a very solitary manner), that we might be together; as Christ sent out his disciples two and two.” He first went into various parts of New-Jersey, then to New-York; and from thence into New-England. He then returned into New-Jersey. He seems, for the most part, to have been free from melancholy in this journey; and many times to have had extraordinary assistance in public ministrations.]

Saturday, April 13. I rode home to my own house. Blessed be the Lord, who has preserved me  
I in

\* It seems, he had a design to remove and live among the Indians at Susquahannah river.

in this tedious journey. Verily it is God that has upheld me, and guarded my goings.

[This week, he went a journey to Philadelphia, in order to engage the Governor there to use his interest with the chief man of the Six Nations, (with whom he maintained a strict friendship), that he would give him leave to live at Susquahannah, and instruct the Indians that are within their territories.\*

Lord's day, April 21. In the season of the communion, I had comfortable apprehensions of the blissful communion of God's people, when they shall meet at their Father's table in his kingdom.—In the afternoon I preached abroad, from Rev. xiv. 4. "These are they that follow the Lamb," &c. God was pleased to give me great freedom and clearness, but not so much warmth as before. However, there was a most amazing attention in the whole assembly; and, as I was informed afterwards, this was a sweet season to many.

Tuesday, April 23. I returned home to the Forks of Delaware; enjoyed some sweet meditations on the road, and was enabled to lift up my heart to God in prayer and praise.

Friday, April 26. I felt a spirit of mortification to the world, in a very great degree. Afterwards I was enabled to rely on God sweetly, for "all things pertaining to life and godliness." Just in the evening, I was visited by a dear Christian friend, with whom I spent an hour or two in conversation, on the very soul of religion. There are many with whom I can talk *about religion*; but, alas! I find few with whom I can talk *religion itself*: but, blessed be the Lord,

\* *The Indians at Susquahannah are a mixed company of many nations, speaking various languages, and few of them properly of the Six Nations. But yet the country having formerly been conquered by the Six Nations, they claim the land; and the Susquahannah-Indians are a kind of vassals to them.*

Lord, there are some that love to feed on the kernel, rather than the shell.

[The next day, he went to the Irish settlement about fifteen miles distant: where he spent the Sabbath, and preached with some considerable assistance. On Monday, he returned very weak, to his own lodgings.]

Tuesday, April 30. I was scarce able to walk about, and was obliged to betake myself to the bed, much of the day; being neither able to read, meditate, nor pray, and having none to converse with in that wilderness. Oh, how heavily does time pass away, when I can do nothing to any good purpose?

Thursday, May 2. In the evening, being a little better in health, I walked into the woods, and enjoyed a sweet season of meditation and prayer. My thoughts run upon Psal. xvii. 15, "I shall be satisfied, when I awake with thy likeness." And it was indeed a precious text to me. I longed to preach to the whole world; and it seemed to me, they must needs all be melted in hearing such precious truths, as I had then a view and relish of.—Blessed be the Lord, that in my late and present weakness, my mind is not gloomy, as at some other times.

Tuesday, May 7. I spent the day chiefly in making preparation for a journey into the wilderness. I was still weak, and concerned how I should perform so difficult a journey. I spent some time in prayer for the divine blessing; but wanted bodily strength to spend the day in fasting and prayer.

[The next day, he set out on his journey to Susquahanna, with his interpreter. He endured great hardships in his way thither through a hideous wilderness; where, after having lodged one night in the open woods, he was overtaken with a north-easterly storm, in which he was ready to perish, having no shelter, and not being able to make a fire in so great a rain, he could have no comfort if he stopt; therefore determined to go forward in hopes of meeting with some shelter, without which he thought it impossible he should live the night through; but their

horses happening to have eat poison (as plants) at a place where they lodged the night before, were so sick that they could neither ride nor lead them, but were obliged to drive them before them, and travel on foot; until through the mercy of God (just at dusk) they came to a bark-hut, where they lodged that night. After he came to Susquahannah, he travelled about an hundred miles on the river, visited many towns and settlements of the Indians; and preached to different nations, by different interpreters. He was sometimes much discouraged, through the opposition that appeared in the Indians to Christianity. At other times, he was encouraged by the disposition, that some of them manifested to hear, and willingness to be instructed. He here met with some that had formerly been his hearers at Kaunau-meek, who saw and heard him again with great joy. He spent a fortnight among the Indians: passed through considerable hardships, frequently lodging on the ground, and sometimes in the open air; and at length fell extremely ill, as he was riding in the wilderness, being seized with an ague, followed with extreme pains in his head and bowels, and a great evacuation of blood; so that he thought he must have perished. But at last coming to an Indian trader's hut, he got leave to stay there: and though without physic or proper food, it pleased God, after about a week, to relieve him so far that he was able to ride. He returned homewards from Juncata, an island far down the river; where was a considerable number of Indians, who appeared more free from prejudices against Christianity, than most of the other Indians. He arrived at the Forks of Delaware on Thursday, May 30, after having rode in this journey about three hundred and forty miles. He came home in a very weak state. However, on the Sabbath, after having preached to the Indians, he preached to the *white* people, with success, from Ilsa liii. 10. "Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him," &c. some being awakened by his preaching.]

Wedn esay,

Wednesday, June 5. I felt thirsting desires after God, and enjoyed a precious season of retirement: divine things opened with clearness and certainty, and had a divine stamp upon them: my soul was also enlarged and refreshed in prayer; I delighted to continue in the duty: and was sweetly assisted in praying for my fellow-Christians, and my dear bretheren in the ministry. O what a blessedness it is, to be as much like God, as it is possible for a creature to be like his Creator! Lord, give me more of *thy likeness*; "I shall be satisfied, when I awake with it."

[Friday, June 7. He went a journey of near fifty miles to Neshaminy, to assist at a sacramental occasion.]

Saturday, June 8. I was exceeding weak and fatigued with riding in the heat yesterday; but being desired, I preached in the afternoon, to a crowded audience, from Isa. xl. 1. "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith God." God your was pleased to give me great freedom, in opening the sorrows of God's people, and in setting before them comforting considerations. And, blessed be the Lord, it was a sweet melting season in the assembly.

Lord's day, June 9. I discoursed to the multitude *extempore*, with some reference to that sacred passage, Isa. liii. 10. "Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him." God gave me great assistance in addressing sinners: and the word was attended with amazing power; many scores, if not hundreds, in that great assembly, consisting of three or four thousand, were much affected; so that there was a "very great mourning, like the mourning of Hadadrimmon."—In the evening, I could hardly look any body in the face, because of the imperfections I saw in my performances in the day past.

Tuesday, June 11. I spent the day mainly in conversation with Christian friends; and enjoyed a sweet sense of divine things. O how desirable it is, to keep company with God's children! These are the "excellent ones of the earth, in whom," I can truly say, "is all my delight." O

what delight will it afford, to meet them all in a state of perfection! Lord, prepare me for that state.

Tuesday, June 18. I set out from New-Brunswick with a design to visit some Indians at a place called *Crosweekfung* in New-Jersey, towards the sea.\* In the afternoon I came to a place called *Cranberry*, and meeting with a serious minister, lodged there with him.

\* *Mr. Brainerd having, when at Boston, wrote and left with a friend a brief relation of his labours with the Indians, during the space of time between November 5, 1744, and June 19, 1745, concludes with this passage: "As my body was very feeble, so my mind was scarce ever so much discouraged about the conversion of the Indians, as at this time. And in this state of body and mind I made my first visit to the Indians in New-Jersey."*

## P A R T VII.

*From his first beginning to preach to the Indians at Crosweekfung, till he returned from his last journey to Susquahannah.*

[**W**E are now come to that part of Mr. Brainerd's life, wherein he had his greatest success. After all his agonizing in prayer, and traveling in birth, for the conversion of Indians; and after waiting in a way of persevering prayer, labour, and suffering, as it were through a long night; at length the day dawns: "Weeping continues for a night, but joy comes in the morning. He went forth weeping, bearing precious seed; and now he comes with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him." The desired event is brought to pass at last; but at a time, and in a place, that scarce ever entered into his heart. An account of this is here inserted, as it was drawn up by Mr. Brainerd himself, pursuant to the order of the honourable society in Scotland.

Wednesday,

Wednesday, June 19. Having spent most of my time for more than a year past amongst the Indians in the Forks of Delaware in Pennsylvania; and having in that time made two journeys to Susquahanna river, far back in that province, in order to treat with the Indians there, respecting Christianity; and not having had any considerable success in either of those places; upon hearing that there was a number of Indians in a place called (by the Indians) Croswickung in New-Jersey, near fourscore miles south-eastward from the Forks of Delaware, I determined to make them a visit, and see what might be done towards the Christianizing of them; and accordingly arrived among them this day.

I found very few persons at the place I visited, and perceived the Indians in these parts were much scattered, there being not more than two or three families in a place, and these small settlements six, ten, fifteen, twenty, and thirty miles, and some more, from the place I was then at. However, I preached to those few who appeared well disposed, and, not inclined to cavil, as the Indians had frequently done elsewhere.

When I had concluded my discourse, I informed them (there being none but a few women and children) that I would willingly visit them again the next day. Whereupon they readily set out, and travelled ten or fifteen miles, in order to give notice to some of their friends at that distance. These women, like the woman of Samaria, seemed desirous that others might "see the man that told them, what they had done" in their lives past, and the misery that attended their *idolatrous* ways.

Thursday, June 20. Towards night, I preached to the Indians again; and had more hearers than before. In the evening, I enjoyed peace and serenity of mind, composure and comfort in prayer; and was enabled to lift up my head with joy, under an apprehension that my redemption draws nigh. Oh, blessed be God, that there remains a rest to his poor weary people!

Friday

Friday, June 21. I was refreshed in secret prayer; but saw myself a poor worthless creature, without wisdom to direct, or strength to help myself. Blessed be God, that lays me under a happy necessity of living upon himself!

Saturday, June 22. About noon, I rode to the Indians again; and near night preached to about 30 of them. I found my body much strengthened, and was enabled to speak with abundant plainness and warmth. And the power of God evidently attended the word; so that sundry persons were brought under great concern for their souls, and made to shed many tears, and to wish for Christ to save them. My soul was much refreshed, and quickened in my work; and I could not but spend much time with them, in order to open both their misery and remedy. While riding, before I came to the Indians, I was enabled to cry to God almost incessantly. In the evening also I found the consolations of God were not small: I was then willing to live, and in some respects desirous of it, that I might do something for the kingdom of Christ; and yet death appeared pleasant: so that, I was in a strait between two. I am often weary of this world; but it is desirable to be drawn, rather than driven out of it.

Lord's day, June 23. I preached to the Indians and spent the day with them.—Their number still increased; and all with one consent seemed to rejoice in my coming among them. Not a word of opposition was heard from any, although in times past they had been quite opposite to any thing of that nature.

June 24. I preached to the Indians at their desire, and upon their own motion. To see poor Pagans desirous of hearing the gospel of Christ, animated me to discourse to them, although I was very weak, and my spirits much exhausted. They attended with the greatest seriousness and diligence; and there was some concern apparent among them.

June 27. I visited and preached to the Indians again. Their number now amounted to about *forty* persons.

sons. Their solemnity and attention still continued; and a considerable concern for their souls became very apparent among sundry of them.

Friday, June 28. The Indians being now gathered a considerable number of them, from their several distant *habitations*, requested me to preach twice a day to them, being desirous to hear as much as they could while I was with them. I cheerfully complied, and could not but admire the goodness of God, who had inclined them to inquire after the way of salvation.

Saturday, June 29. I preached twice to the Indians; and could not but wonder at their seriousness, and the strictness of their attention.—Blessed be God that has inclined their hearts to hear. And O how refreshing it is to me, to see them attend with such uncommon diligence and affection.

I likewise saw the hand of God making provision for their subsistence together, in order to their being instructed. For this day and the day before, with only walking a little way from the place of our daily meeting, they killed *three deer*, which were a seasonable supply for their wants, and without which, they could not have subsisted together in order to attend the means of grace.

Lord's day, June 30. I preached twice this day also, and observed more concern and affection among the poor Heathens than ever; so that they even constrained me to tarry longer with them; although my constitution was exceedingly worn out, and my health much impaired by the late fatigues and labours, and especially by my late journey to Susquahannah.

July 1. I preached again twice to a very serious and attentive assembly, who had now learned to attend the worship of God with *Christian decency*.

There were now between *forty* and *fifty* persons of them present, old and young.

I spent some time in discoursing with them in private, inquiring what they remembered of the great truths that had been taught them, it was amaz-  
ing

ing to see how they had received and retained the instructions given them, and what a measure of knowledge some of them had acquired in a few days.

July 2. I was obliged to leave these Indians at Crofweekfung, thinking it my duty, as soon as health would admit, to visit those at the Forks of the Delaware. When I came to take leave of them, they all earnestly inquired when I would come again, and expressed a great desire of being farther instructed: and of their own accord agreed, that when I should come again, they would all meet and live together during my continuance with them; and that they would do their utmost endeavours to gather all the other Indians in these parts that were farther remote. And when I parted, one told me with many tears, "She wished God would change her heart:" another, that "she wanted to find Christ:" and an old man that had been one of their *chiefs*, wept bitterly. I then promised them to return as speedily as my health, and business elsewhere would admit, and felt not a little concerned at parting, lest good impressions then apparent upon them, might wear off.

Afterwards I rode to Brunswick, near forty miles, and lodged there. I felt my heart drawn out after God in prayer, almost all the afternoon. And in the evening, could not help crying to God for these poor Indians; and after I went to bed, my heart continued to go out to God for them, 'till I dropped asleep.

[He was now so beat out by constant preaching, that he found it necessary to give himself some relaxation. He spent therefore about a week in New-Jersey, visiting several ministers, and performing some necessary business. And though he was very weak in body, yet he seems to have been strong in spirit. On Friday, July 12. he arrived at his own house in the Forks of Delaware; continuing still free from melancholy; and from day to day enjoying freedom and refreshment.]

Lord's day, July 14. I discoursed to the Indians twice, several of whom appeared convinced of their sin and misery; so that they wept much the whole time of divine service.

Afterwards I discoursed to a number of white people then present.—

Thursday, July 18. I longed to spend the little inch of time I have in the world for God. Felt a spirit of seriousness, tenderness, and devotion, and wished to spend the whole night in prayer and communion with God.

Friday, July 19. In the evening I walked abroad for prayer and meditation, and enjoyed composure and freedom in these sweet exercises; especially in meditation on Rev. iii. 12. "Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the temple of my God," &c. This was a delightful theme. Oh, when shall I go no more out from the service and enjoyment of the dear Lord! Lord, hasten the blessed day.

Lord's day, July 21. I preached to the Indians first, then to a number of white people, and in the afternoon to the Indians again.—Divine truths seemed to make very considerable impressions upon several of them, and caused the tears to flow freely.

Afterwards I baptized my *interpreter* and his *wife*, who were the first I baptized among the Indians.

They are both persons of some *experimental* knowledge in religion; have both been awakened to a solemn concern for their souls and brought to a sense of their misery and *undone*ness; and have both been comforted with divine consolations.

It may perhaps be satisfactory that I should give some relation of his experience since he has been with me.

When I first employed him in the beginning of summer 1744, he was well fitted for his work in regard of his acquaintance with the Indian and English language; and in regard of his desire that the Indians should conform to the customs and manners of the English. But he seemed to have no impression of religion, and in that respect was very *unfit* for his work,

work, being incapable of understanding and communicating to others many things of importance; so that I laboured under great disadvantages in addressing the Indians, for want of his having an experimental acquaintance with divine truths; and, at times I was much discouraged, when I observed that divine truths made little or no impression upon him for many *weeks* together.

He indeed behaved soberly, (although before he had been a *hard drinker*), and seemed honestly engaged as far as he was capable in the performance of his work, and especially he was very desirous that the Indians should conform to the customs of the Christian world. But still seemed to have no concern about his own soul.

Near the latter end of July 1744, I preached to an assembly of white people, with freedom and fervency: at which time he was present, and was somewhat awakened; so that the next day he discoursed freely with me about his spiritual concerns and gave me an opportunity to use farther endeavours to fasten the impressions upon his mind: and I could plainly perceive after this, that he addressed the Indians with more concern and fervency.

But these impressions seemed to decline, 'till in the fall of the year following he fell in a weak state of body. At this season divine truth took hold of him, and made deep impressions upon his mind. He was brought under great concern for his soul, and was burdened from day to day. His trouble prevailed, 'till at length his sleep departed from him and he had little rest day or night; but walked about under great pressure of mind, and appeared like *another* man to his neighbours, who could not but observe his behaviour with wonder.

After he had been sometime striving for mercy he says, there seemed to be an impassable mountain before him. He was pressing towards heaven, but "his way was hedged up with thorns, that he could not stir an inch farther." He looked this way and that way, but could find no way at all. He felt "signific

signified just nothing at all to strive and struggle any more." And here, he says, he gave over striving, and felt that it was a gone case with him, as to his *own* power, and that all his attempts were, and for ever would be vain and fruitless.

He knew, he said, he was not guilty of some wicked actions as others were guilty of. He had not been used to steal, quarrel, and murder; the latter of which is common among the Indians. He likewise knew that he had done many things that were right. But still his cry was, "that he had never done one good thing," (meaning that he had never done any thing from a right *principle*, and with a right *view*, though he had done many things that were *materially* good.) And now I thought, said he, that I must sink down to hell, that there was no hope for me, "because I never could do any thing that was good;" and if God let me alone never so long, and I should try never so much, still I should do nothing but what is bad.

There was one thing more in his view of things that was very remarkable. He not only saw, what a miserable state he himself was in, but he saw the world around him were in the same perishing circumstances. And this he saw clearly, "as if he was now awaked out of sleep, or had a cloud taken from before his eyes." He saw that the life he had lived was the way to eternal death, that he was now on the brink of endless misery: and when he looked round he saw multitudes of others who had lived the same life with himself, — had no more goodness than he, and yet dreamed that they were safe enough, as he had formerly done.

After he had been for some time in this condition, sensible of the impossibility of helping himself; then, he says, it was borne in upon his mind as if it had been audibly spoken, "There is hope, there is hope." Whereupon his soul seemed to rest and be in some measure satisfied, though he had no considerable joy: Neither can he remember distinctly

any views he had of Christ, or give any clear account of his acceptance through him.

But these exercises of soul were followed by a great change, so that it might justly be said, he was become *another man*. He was much altered, and even the world could not but admire what had befallen him to make so great a change in his temper, discourse, and behaviour.—

And especially there was a surprising alteration in his public performances. He now addressed the Indians with admirable fervency, and scarce knew when to leave off: and sometimes when I had concluded my discourse, and was returning homeward, he would tarry behind to repeat and inculcate what had been spoken.

His change is *abiding*, and his life *unblemished* to this day, though it is now more than six months since he experienced it; in which space he has been as much exposed to *strong drink*, as possible, in divers places; and yet has never discovered any desire after it.

And upon strict observation of his Christian temper, and unblemished behaviour for so considerable a time, I think I have reason to hope that he is “created anew in Christ Jesus to good works.”

His name is Moses Tinda Tautamy; he is about fifty years of age, and pretty well acquainted with the notions and customs of his countrymen, and so is the better able to expose them. He has already been, and I trust will yet be a blessing to other Indians.

Friday, July 26. In the evening, God was pleased to help me in prayer, beyond what I have experienced for some time; especially for the enlargement of Christ's kingdom, and for the conversion of my poor people: my soul relied on God for the accomplishment of that great work. Oh, how sweet were the thoughts of death to me at this time! How I longed to be with Christ, to be employed in the glorious work of angels, and with an angel's freedom, vigour, and delight! And yet how willing was I to stay awhile on

earth,

earth, that I might do something, if the Lord pleased, for his interest. My soul longed for the ingathering of the poor Heathen; and I cried to God for them most willingly and heartily. This was a sweet season; I had a lively taste of heaven, and a temper suited in some measure to the entertainments of it. My soul was grieved to leave the place; but my body was weak and worn out. I longed that the remaining part of my life might be filled up with more fervency and activity in the things of God! Oh the inward peace, composure, and God-like serenity of such a frame! Heaven must needs differ from this only in degree, and not in kind.

Lord's day, July 28. I preached again, and perceived my people, more thoughtful than ever. I was told by some, that seeing my interpreter and his wife baptized made them more concerned than any thing they had ever seen or heard. There was indeed a considerable appearance of divine power among them at the time that ordinance was administered.

July 30. I discoursed to a number of my people, and gave them particular advice and direction, being now about to leave them for the present, in order to renew my visit to the Indians in New-Jersey. They were very attentive, and earnestly desirous to know when I designed to return.

[On Wednesday, July 31. He set out on his return to Crofweckung, and arrived there the next day. In his way he had longing desires that he might come to the Indians in the "fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ;" attended with a sense of his own great weakness, dependence, and worthlessness.]

Friday, August 2. In the evening I retired, and my soul was drawn out in prayer to God; especially for my poor people, to whom I had sent word to gather together, that I might preach to them the next day. I was much enlarged in praying for their conversion; and scarce ever found my desires of any thing of this nature, so sensibly and clearly, and free from selfish views. I had no desire to be the instrument of so glorious a work, as I prayed for among

the Indians; if the blessed work might be accomplished to the honour of God, and the enlargement of the dear Redeemer's kingdom, this was all my desire and care; and for this mercy I hoped, but with trembling. My rising hopes, respecting the conversion of the Indians, have been so often dashed, that my spirit is as it were broken, and I hardly dare hope.

Saturday, August 3. I now found them serious, and a number of them under deep concern for an interest in Christ: their convictions of their sinful and perishing state having, in my absence been much promoted by the labours of the Reverend Mr. William Tennent, to whom I had advised them to apply, and whose house they had frequented much.—I preached to them this day on Rev. xxii. 17. "And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely."

The Lord enabled me to set before them the Lord Jesus Christ as a kind and compassionate Saviour, inviting distressed and perishing sinners to accept everlasting mercy. And a surprising concern soon appeared among them. There were about twenty adult persons together, (many of the Indians at remote places, not having as yet had time to come since my return,) and not above two that I could see with dry eyes. Some discovered vehement longings after Christ, to save them from the misery they felt and feared.

Lord's day, August 4. Being invited by a neighbouring minister to assist in the administration of the Lord's supper, I complied with his request, and took the Indians along with me; not only those that were together the day before, but many more that were coming to hear me; so that there were near fifty in all.

They attended the several discourses of the day; some of them were much affected, and all seemed to have their concern raised.

Now a change in their manners began to appear. In the evening when they came to sup together, they would not taste a morsel till they had sent to me to come and ask a blessing on their food; at which time sundry of them wept, especially when I mind-  
ed

ed them how they had in times past eat their feasts in honour to devils, and neglected to thank God for them.

August 5. After a sermon had been preached by another minister, I preached, and concluded the public work of the solemnity from John vii. 37. In my discourse I addressed the Indians in particular, who sat by themselves in a part of the house; at which time one or two of them were struck with deep concern, who had been little affected before: others had their concern increased to a considerable degree. In the evening I discoursed to them, and found them universally engaged, inquiring, "What they should do to be saved?" And all their conversation among themselves turned upon *religious* matters, in which they were much assisted by my interpreter, who was with them day and night.

This day there was one woman, that had been much concerned ever since she heard me preach in June, who obtained comfort, I trust, solid and well grounded: she seemed to be filled with love to Christ, at the same time she behaved humbly and tenderly, and appeared afraid of nothing so much as of grieving him whom her soul loved.

August 6. In the morning I discoursed to the Indians at the house where we lodged: many of them were then much affected, so that a few words about their souls would cause the tears to flow freely, and produce many sobs and groans.

In the afternoon, they being returned to the place where I have usually preached among them, I again discoursed to them there. There were about fifty-five persons in all, about forty that were capable of attending divine service with understanding; I insisted upon 1 John iv. 10. "Herein is love," &c. They seemed eager of hearing; but there appeared nothing very remarkable, till near the close of my discourse; and then divine truths were attended with a surprising influence. There was scarce *three* in *forty* that could refrain from tears and bitter cries. They all, as one, seemed in an agony of soul to obtain an interest in Christ; and the more I discoursed,

of the love and compassion of God in sending his Son to suffer for the sins of men; and the more I invited them to come and partake of his love, the more their distress was aggravated.

It was surprising to see how their hearts were pierced with the tender invitations of the gospel, when there was not a word of terror spoken to them.

There were this day two persons that obtained comfort, which (when I came to discourse with them) appeared solid, rational, and scriptural. After I had inquired into the grounds of their comfort, I asked what they wanted God to do further for them? They replied, "They wanted Christ should wipe their hearts quite clean."

August 7. I preached to the Indians from Isa. liii. 3.—10. There was a remarkable influence attending the word. Most were much affected, and many in great distress; and some could neither go nor stand, but lay flat on the ground, as if pierced at heart, crying incessantly for mercy: several were newly awakened, and it was remarkable, that as fast as they came from remote places round about, the Spirit of God seemed to seize them.

After public service I found two persons more that had newly met with comfort, of whom I had good hopes; and a third that I could not but entertain some hopes of, so that here were now six in all that had got some relief from their spiritual distresses, and five whose experience appeared clear and satisfactory.

August 8. In the afternoon I preached to the Indians, their number was now about sixty-five persons, men, women, and children. I discoursed from Luke xiv. 16.—23. and was favoured with *uncommon* freedom.

There was much concern among them while I was discoursing publicly; but afterwards when I spoke to one and another more particularly, whom I perceived under concern, the power of God seemed to descend upon the assembly "like a rushing mighty wind," and with an astonishing energy bore down all before it.

I stood amazed at the influence that seized the audience almost universally, and could compare it to nothing more aptly than a mighty torrent, that bears down and sweeps before it whatever is in its way. Almost all persons of all ages were bowed down together, and scarce one was able to withstand the shock of this surprising operation. Old men and women, who had been drunken wretches for many years, and some little children, not more than six or seven years of age, appeared in distress for their souls, as well as persons of middle age. And it was apparent these children were not *merely* frightened with seeing the general concern; but were made sensible of their danger, the badness of their hearts, and their misery without Christ. The most stubborn hearts were now obliged to bow. A principal man among the Indians, who before thought his state good, because he knew more than the generality of the Indians, and who with great confidence the day before, told me, "he had been a Christian more than ten years," was now brought under solemn concern for his soul, and wept bitterly. Another man considerable in years, who had been a *murderer*, a *poisoner*, and a notorious drunkard, was likewise brought down to cry for mercy with many tears, and to complain much that he could be no more unconcerned when he saw his danger so great.

They were almost universally praying and crying for mercy in every part of the house, and many out of doors, and numbers could neither go nor stand: their concern was so great, each for himself, that none seemed to take any notice of those about them, but each prayed for themselves; and were, to their own apprehension, as much retired as if every one had been by himself in a desert, or, rather, they thought nothing about *any* but themselves, and so were every one praying *apart*, although all *together*.

It seemed to me there was now an exact fulfilment of that prophecy, Zech. xii. 10, 11, 12, for there was now "a great mourning, like the mourning of Hadrimmon;"—and each seemed to "mourn apart."

Methought this had a near resemblance to the day of God's power, mentioned Josh. x. 14, for I must say, I never saw *any day like it* in all respects; it was a day wherein the Lord did much destroy the kingdom of darkness among this people.

This concern was most rational and just; those who had been awakened any considerable time, complained especially of the badness of their *hearts*; those newly awakened, of the badness of their *lives* and *actions*; and all were afraid of the anger of God, and of everlasting misery as the desert of their sins.

Some of the *white* people, who came out of curiosity to "hear what this babbler would say" to the poor ignorant Indians, were much awakened, and appeared to be wounded with a view of their perishing state.

Those who had lately obtained relief, were filled with comfort; they appeared calm and rejoiced in Christ Jesus; and some of them took their distressed friends by the hand, telling them of the goodness of Christ, and the comfort that is to be enjoyed in him, and invited them to come and give up their hearts to him. And I could observe some of them, in the most unaffected manner, lifting up their eyes to heaven, as if crying for mercy, while they saw the distress of the poor souls around them.

There was one remarkable instance this day, that I cannot but take particular notice of. A young Indian woman, who, I believe, never knew before she had soul, hearing that there was something strange among the Indians, came (it seems) to see what was the matter. I had not proceeded far in my discourse, before she felt *effectually* that she had a soul, and before I had concluded, was so convinced of her sin and misery, and so distressed with concern for her soul, that she seemed like one pierced through with a dart, and cried out incessantly. She could neither go nor stand, nor sit on her seat without being held up. After public service was over, she lay flat on the ground praying earnestly, and would take no notice of, nor give any answer to any that spoke to her.

hearkened to hear what she said, and perceived the burden of her prayer to be, *Guttummaut alummehe sechaumeh kmeleh Ndah*, i. e. "Have mercy on me, and help me to give you my heart." And thus she continued praying incessantly for many hours.

August 9. I spent almost the whole day with the Indians, the former part of it in discoursing with them privately, especially some who lately received comfort, and endeavouring to inquire into the grounds of it, as well as to give them some proper instructions, cautions, and directions.

In the afternoon I discoursed to them publicly. There were now present about seventy persons. I opened and applied the parable of the sower, and was enabled to discourse with much plainness. There were many tears among them while I was discoursing, but no considerable cry: yet some were much affected with a few words spoken from Matth. xi. 8, with which I concluded. But while I was discoursing near night to two or three of the awakened persons, a divine influence seemed to attend what was spoken, which caused the persons to cry out in anguish of soul, although I spoke not a word of terror; but, on the contrary, set before them the fullness of Christ's merits, and his willingness to save all that came to him.

The cry of these was heard by others, who, though scattered before, immediately gathered round. I then proceeded in the same strain of gospel-invitation, till they were all melted into tears and cries, except two or three; and seemed in the greatest distress to find and secure an interest in the great Redeemer.—Some who had but little more than a *ruffle* made in their *passions* the day before, seemed now to be deeply affected: and the concern in general appeared far as prevalent as the day before. There was indeed a very *great mourning* among them, and yet every one seemed to *mourn apart*. For so great was their concern, that almost every one was praying and crying for himself, as if none had been near.

Gut-

*Guttummaukalumme*, *guttummaukalumme*, i. e. "Have mercy upon me, have mercy upon me;" was the common cry,

It was very affecting to see the poor Indians, who the other day were yelling in their *idolatrous* feasts, now crying to God with such importunity, for an interest in his dear Son!

I found two or three who I hope had taken comfort upon good grounds since the evening before: and these, with others that had obtained comfort, were together, and seemed to rejoice much that God was carrying on his work with such power upon others.

August 10, I began to discourse privately with those who had obtained comfort; endeavouring to instruct, direct, caution, and comfort them. But others being eager of hearing every word that related to spiritual concerns, soon came together one after another: and when I had discoursed to the *young converts* more than half an hour, they seemed much melted with divine things, and earnestly desirous to be with Christ.

When I had spent some time with these, I turned to the other Indians, and spoke to them from Luke xix. 10. I had not discoursed long before their concern rose to a great degree, and the house was filled with cries and groans. And when I insisted on the compassion and care of the Lord Jesus Christ for *those that were lost*, and could find no way of escape, this melted them down the more, and aggravated their distress, that they could not come to so kind a Saviour.

Sundry persons, who before had been but slightly awakened, were now deeply wounded. And one man in particular, who was never before awakened, was now made to feel, that "the word of the Lord was quick and powerful, sharper than any two-edged sword." He seemed to be pierced to the heart, and said, "all the wickedness of his past life was brought fresh to his remembrance, and he saw  
all

all the vile actions he had done formerly, as if done but yesterday."

I found one that had newly received comfort, after pressing distress from day to day. I could not but admire the divine goodness. There seems to be some good done by every discourse; some newly awakened every day, and some comforted.

Lord's day, August 11. I discoursed in the forenoon from the parable of the *prodigal son*.

In the afternoon I discoursed upon part of St. Peter's sermon, Acts ii. and at the close of my discourse to the Indians, made an address to the *white* people, and divine truths seemed to be attended with power both to the English and Indians. Several of the *white Heathen* were awakened, and could no longer be idle spectators, but found they had souls to save as well as the Indians, and a great concern spread through the whole assembly, so that this also appeared to be a day of God's power.

The number of the Indians, old and young, was now upwards of seventy, and one or two were newly awakened this day, who never appeared to be moved before.

Those that had obtained comfort, and had given evidences of a saving change, appeared humble and devout, and behaved in an agreeable and Christian manner. I was refreshed to see the tenderness of conscience manifest in some of them. Perceiving one of them very sorrowful in the morning, I enquired to the cause of her sorrow, and found she had been angry with her child the evening before, and was in fear lest her anger had been inordinate, which grieved her, that she waked and began to sob before day-light, and continued weeping for several hours together.

August 14. I spent the day with the Indians. There was one of them who had some time since put away his wife, (as is common among them) and taken another woman, and being now brought under some serious impressions, was earnestly desirous to know what God would have him do. When  
the

the law of God respecting *marriage* had been open to them, and the cause of his leaving his wife enquired into; and when it appeared she had given him no just occasion by *unchastity* to desert her, and that she was willing to forgive his past misconduct he was then told, that it was his indispensable duty to renounce the woman he had last taken, and receive the other who was his proper wife; which he cheerfully complied, and thereupon publicly renounced the woman he had last taken, and publicly promised to live with his wife during life.—And here appeared a clear demonstration of the power of God's word upon their hearts. A few weeks before the whole world could not have persuaded him to a compliance with Christian rules in this affair.

August 15. I preached from Luke iv. 16.—27. The word was attended with power upon the hearts of the hearers. There was much concern, many tears, and affecting cries among them, and some were deeply wounded and distressed. There were formerly newly awakened who came but this week, and convictions seemed to be promoted in others.—Those that had received comfort, were likewise refreshed and strengthened, and the work of grace appeared to advance in all respects.

August 16. I spent a considerable time in conversing privately with sundry of the Indians. I found one that had got comfort, after pressing concern, and could not but hope, when I discoursed with her, that her comfort was of the right kind.

In the afternoon I preached to them from John 26.—34. Toward the close of my discourse, divine truths were attended with considerable power upon the audience, and more especially after public service was over, when I particularly addressed the distressed persons.

There was a great concern for their souls spread generally among them: but especially there were two persons newly awakened to a sense of their sin and misery, one of whom was lately come, and

other had all along been very attentive, and desirous of being awakened, but could never before have any lively view of her perishing state. But now her spiritual distress was such, that I had never seen *any* more pressing. Sundry *old* men were also in distress for their souls; so that they could not refrain from weeping and crying out aloud, and their bitter groans were the most convincing, as well as affecting evidence of the depth of their inward anguish.—God is powerfully at work among them! True and genuine convictions of sin are daily promoted in many instances, and some are newly awakened from time to time.

August 17. I spent much time in private conferences with the Indians. I found one who had newly obtained comfort, after a long season of spiritual distress, (he having been one of my hearers in the Forks of Delaware for more than a year, and now followed me hither under deep concern: and I had abundant reason to hope that his comfort was well grounded.

Monday, August 19. I rode to Freehold, and preached to a considerable assembly, from Matth. v. 3. It pleased God to leave me dry and barren; but he has made my soul acquiesce in his will. It is contrary to *flesh and blood*, to be cut off from all freedom, in a large auditory, where their expectations are much raised; but so it was with me; and God helped me to say; “ Good is the will of the Lord.”

Friday, August 23. I spent some time with the Indians in private discourse; afterwards preached to them from John vi. 44.—50. There was, as has been usual, a great attention and some affection among them. Several appeared deeply concerned for their souls, and could not but express their inward anguish by tears and cries. But the amazing influence that has been so powerfully among them, seems, at present, in some degree abated.

August 24. I spent the forenoon in discoursing to some of the Indians, in order to their receiving the ordinance of *baptism*. When I had opened the nature of the ordinance, the obligations attending it,

the duty of devoting ourselves to God in it, and the privilege of being *in covenant* with him, sundry of them seemed to be filled with love to God, and delighted with the thoughts of giving up themselves to him in that solemn and public manner.

Afterwards I discoursed publicly from 1 Thess. iv. 13.—17. There was a solemn attention, and visible concern in the time of public service, which was afterwards increased by some further exhortation given them to come to Christ, and give up their hearts to him, that they might be fitted to “ascend up and meet him in the air,” when he shall “descend with a shout, and the voice of the archangel.”

There were several Indians newly come, who thought their state good, because they had lived with the *white people* under gospel-light, although they were altogether unacquainted with the power of religion.

With those I discoursed particularly after public worship, and was surpris'd to see their self-righteous disposition, their strong attachment to the covenant of works, and the high value they put upon their supposed attainments. Yet after much discourse, one appeared convinced, that “by the deeds of the law no flesh living should be justified,” and wept bitterly, inquiring, “what he must do to be saved?”

Lord's day, August 25. I preached in the forenoon from Luke xv. 3.—7. There being a multitude of *white people* present, I made an address to them at the close of my discourse: but could not so much as keep them orderly; for scores of them kept walking and gazing about, and behaved more indecently than *any Indians* I ever address'd.

Afterwards I baptized *twenty-five* persons of the Indians, fifteen adults, and ten children. Most of the adults I have reason to hope are renewed persons: Only the case of two or three appeared more doubtful.

After the croud of spectators was gone, I called the baptized persons together, and discours'd to them in particular, minded them of the solemn obligations they were now under to live to God, and encourag-

ed them to watchfulness and devotion, by setting before them the *comfort* and happy *conclusion* of a religious life.—This was a sweet season indeed! Their hearts were engaged and chearful in duty, and they rejoiced that they had in a public and solemn manner dedicated themselves to God,—Love seemed to reign among them! They took each other by the hand with tenderness and affection, as if their hearts were knit together, while I was discoursing to them: and all their deportment towards each other was such, that a *serious spectator* might justly be excited to cry out with admiration, “Behold how they love one another!” Sundry of the other Indians at seeing and hearing these things, were much affected and wept bitterly, longing to be partakers of the same joy and comfort that these discovered by their countenances as well as conduct.

Monday, August 26. I preached to my people from John vi. 51—55. After I had discoursed some time, I addressed those in particular who entertained hopes that they were “passed from death to life.” I opened to them the nature of those consolations Christ gives his people, shewed them that such have already the “beginnings of eternal life,” (ver. 54.) and that their *heaven* shall be speedily completed.

I no sooner began to discourse, but the *Christians* in the congregation began to be melted with affection to, and desire of the enjoyment of Christ, and of a state of perfect purity. They wept affectionately and yet joyfully, and their tears and sobs discovered *brokenness* of heart, and yet were attended with *comfort* and *sweetness*; so that this was a tender, affectionate, humble, delightful melting, and appeared to be the genuine effect of the Spirit of *adoption*, and very far from the Spirit of *bondage* that they before laboured under. The influence spread from these through the whole assembly, and there quickly appeared a wonderful concern among them. Many who had not yet found Christ, were surprisngly engaged in seeking after him. Their number was now about *ninety-five* persons, and almost all affected

fected either with *joy* in Christ, or with the *utmost concern* to obtain an interest in him.

Being convinced it was now my duty to take a journey far back to the Indians on Susquahannah river, after having spent some hours in public and private discourses with my people, I told them that I must leave them for the present, and go to their *brethren* far remote, and preach to them; that I wanted the Spirit of God should go with me, without whom nothing could be done to any good purpose, as they themselves had had opportunity to see: and asked them, if they would not spend the remainder of the day in prayer for me, that God would go with me, and succeed my endeavours. They cheerfully complied with the motion, and soon after I left them (the sun being then about an hour and half high) they began, and continued praying all night 'till *break of day*, never mistrusting (they tell me) 'till they went out and saw the *morning-star* a considerable height, that it was later than common bed-time.

There were, I trust, this day two distressed souls brought to the enjoyment of solid comfort.

Likewise this day an *old* Indian, who has all his days been an obstinate *idolater*, was brought to give up his *rattles* (which they use for music in their *idolatrous* feasts and dances) to the other Indians, who quickly destroyed them; and this without any attempt of mine in the affair, I having said nothing to him about it; so that it was nothing but the power of God's word, without any particular application to this sin, that produced this effect. Thus God has begun, thus he has hitherto carried on a work of grace amongst these Indians. May the glory be ascribed to him, who is the sole author of it!

[The next day he set out on a journey towards the Forks of Delaware, designing to go from thence to Susquahannah, before he returned to Croswickung. It was five days from his departure from Croswickung, before he reached the Forks, going round by the way of Philadelphia, and waiting on the governor of

Pensylvania, to get a recommendation from him to the chiefs of the Indians.]

### *Forks of Delaware.*

Lord's day, September 1. I preached to the Indians here, from Luke xiv. 16—23.

Afterwards I preached to a number of *white* people, and observed many of them in tears, and some who had been formerly as careless and unconcerned about religion as the Indians.

Towards night I discoursed to the Indians again, and perceived a greater attention, and more visible concern among them, than has been usual in *these parts*.

September 3. I preached to the Indians from Is. liii. 3—6. The divine presence seemed to be in the midst of the assembly, and a considerable concern spread among them. Sundry persons seemed to be awakened, among whom were two stupid creatures, that I could scarce ever before keep awake while I was discoursing to them.

Wednesday, September 4. I rode 15 miles to an Irish settlement, and preached there from Luke xiv. 22. "And yet there is room." God was pleased to afford me some tenderness and enlargement in the first prayer, and much freedom, as well as warmth, in sermon. There were many tears in the assembly: the people of God seemed to melt, and others to be in some measure awakened. Blessed be the Lord, that lets me see his work going on in one place and another.

September 5. I discoursed to the Indians from the parable of the sower, and afterwards conversed particularly with sundry persons, which occasioned them to weep, and even to cry out in an affecting manner, and seized others with surprize and concern. Several of these had been with me to Oros week long, and some of them felt the power of God's work. I asked one of them why he now cried? He replied, "When he thought how Christ was slain

like a lamb, and spilt his blood for finners, he could not help crying:" and thereupon bursts out into tears and cries again. I then asked his wife, who likewise had been abundantly comforted, wherefore she cried? She answered, "She was grieved that the Indians here would not come to Christ, as well as those at Crofweekfung. I asked her if she found a heart to pray for them, and whether Christ had been near to her of late in prayer, as in time past? (which is my usual method of expressing a sense of the divine presence.) She replied, "Yes, he had been near to her; and that at some times when she had been praying alone, her heart loved to pray so, that she could not bear to leave the place, but wanted to stay and pray longer."

Lord's day, September 8. I discoursed to the Indians in the forenoon from John xii. 44. 50. in the afternoon from Acts ii. 36—39. The word of God seemed to fall with *weight* and influence upon them. There were but few present, but most that were, were in tears, and sundry cried out under distressing concern for their souls.

There was one man awakened, who never before discovered any concern for his soul. There appeared a remarkable work of the Spirit among them, almost generally, not unlike what has been of late at Crofweekfung. It seemed as if the divine influence had spread from thence to this place.

Sundry of the careless white people now present, were startled, seeing the power of God so prevalent among the Indians. I then made a particular address to them, which seemed to make some impression upon them.

In the evening God was pleased to enlarge me in prayer, and give me freedom at the throne of grace: I cried to God for the enlargement of his kingdom in the world, and particularly among my dear people: and was enabled to pray for many dear ministers of my acquaintance, both in these parts and in New-England. And my soul was so engaged in that sweet exercise, that I knew not how to leave the mercy-seat.

eat. I saw, God was both able and willing to do all that I desired, for myself and friends, and his church in general. And afterwards, when I was just going to bed, God helped me to renew my petitions with ardency and freedom.

Monday, September 9. I left the Indians in the Forks of Delaware, and set out on a journey towards Susquahannah-river, directing my course towards the Indian-town more than an hundred and twenty miles westward from the Forks.

September 13. After having lodged out three nights, I arrived at the Indian-town I aimed at on Susquahannah, called Shaumoking, (one of the places I visited in May last,) and was kindly received by the Indians: but had little satisfaction by reason of the Heathenish dance they then held in the house where I was obliged to lodge, which I could not suppress, though I often intreated them to desist, for the sake of one of their own friends who was sick in the house.

This town lies partly on the east side of the river, partly on the west, and partly on a large island in it, and contains upwards of fifty houses, and (they tell me) near three hundred persons: but of three different tribes of Indians, speaking three languages wholly *unintelligible* to each other. About one half of its inhabitants are Delawares, the others called Senakas, and Tutelas. The Indians of this place are counted the most drunken, mischievous, and ruffianly *fellows* of any in these parts; and *Satan* seems to have his *seat* in this *town* in an eminent manner.

Saturday, September 14. I visited the Delaware king, (who was supposed to be at the point of death when I was here in May last, but was now recovered,) and discoursed with him and others respecting Christianity, and spent the afternoon with them, and had more encouragement than I expected. The *king* appeared kindly disposed, and willing to be instructed; this gave me some encouragement that God would open an *effectual door* for my preaching the gospel here. This was a refreshment to me in the wilderness,

derness, and rendered my *solitary* circumstances comfortable and pleasant.

In the evening my soul was enlarged in prayer especially, that God would set up his kingdom in this place, where the *devil* now reigns. My soul cried, "Lord, set up thy kingdom, for thine own glory. Glorify thyself; and I shall rejoice. Get honour to thy blessed name; and this is all I desire. Do with me just what thou wilt. Blessed be thy name forever, that thou art God; and that thou wilt glorify thyself. O that the whole world might glorify thee! O let these poor people be brought to know thee, and love thee, for the glory of thy ever-blessed name!"

Lord's day, September 15. I visited the *chief* of the Delawares again; and discoursed to the Indians in the afternoon. I still hoped that God would open their hearts to receive the gospel, though many of them in the place were so drunk from day to day, that I could get no opportunity to speak to them.

September 16. I spent the forenoon with the Indians, endeavouring to instruct them from house to house, and to engage them, to be friendly to Christianity.

Towards night I went to a part of the town where they were *sober*, and got together near fifty persons of them.—There was a surprising attention among them, and they manifested a desire of being further instructed. There was also one or two that seemed to be touched, who appeared pleased with some conversation in private, after I had concluded my public discourse.

My spirits were much refreshed, and I could not but return with my interpreter (having no *other companion* in this journey), to my poor hard lodgings, rejoicing in hopes that God designed to set up his kingdom here, and found uncommon freedom in addressing the throne of grace for the accomplishment of so glorious a work.

September 17. I spent the forenoon in discoursing to the Indians. About noon I left Shaumoking, (most of the Indians going out this day to hunt,) and travelled down the river south-westward.

September

September 19. I visited an Indian town called *Juncata*, situate on an island in Susquahannah. I was much discouraged with the behaviour of the Indians here, although they appeared friendly when I was with them last spring; yet they now seemed resolved to retain their Pagan notions, and persist in their *idolatrous* practices.

September 20. I visited the Indians again at *Juncata* island, and found them busy in making preparations for a great *sacrifice* and *dance*. So I had no opportunity to get them together in order to discourse with them about Christianity. My spirits were much sunk, especially seeing I had now no interpreter but a Pagan, who was as much attached to *idolatry* as any of them; so that I was under the greatest disadvantages imaginable. However, I attempted to discourse privately with some of them, but without any appearance of success.

In the evening they met together, near a hundred of them, and danced round a large fire, having prepared ten fat deer for the *sacrifice*. The fat of whose inwards they burnt in the fire while they were dancing, and sometimes raised the flame to a prodigious height, at the same time yelling and shouting in such a manner, that they might have been heard two miles or more.

They continued their *sacred dance* all night; after which they eat the *flesh* of the *sacrifice*, and retired each to his lodging.

I enjoyed little satisfaction this night, being entirely alone on the island, (as to any Christian company,) and in the midst of this *idolatrous* revel; and having walked to and fro 'till body and mind were much oppressed, I at length crept into a little crib made for corn, and there slept on the poles.

Lord's day, September 21. I spent the day with the Indians on the island. As soon as they were up in the morning, I attempted to instruct them, and laboured to get them together, but quickly found they had something else to do; for they gathered together all their *powwows*, (or conjurers,) and set about  
half

Half a dozen of them to playing their tricks, and acting their frantic postures, in order to find out why they were so sickly, numbers of them being at that time disordered with a *fever*, and bloody *flux*. In this they were engaged for several hours, making all their wild distracted motions imaginable: sometimes singing; sometimes howling; sometimes extending the hands to the utmost stretch, spreading all their fingers, and seemed to push with them, as if they designed to fright something away, or at least keep off at arms-end; sometimes stroking their faces with their hands, then spouting water as fine as mist; sometimes sitting flat on the earth, then bowing down their faces to the ground; wringing their sides, as in pain and anguish: twisting their faces, turning up their eyes, grunting, or puffing.

Their monstrous actions seemed to have something in them peculiarly suited to raise the devil, if he could be raised by any thing odd and frightful. Some of them were much more fervent in the business than others, and seemed to *chant*, *peep*, and *mutter* with great degree of warmth and vigour. I sat about thirty feet from them, (though undiscovered,) with my bible in my hand, resolving, if possible, to spoil their sport, and prevent their receiving any answers from the *infernal* world. They continued their hideous charms for more than three hours, until they had wearied themselves out, although they had taken sundry intervals of rest; and at length broke up, apprehended, without receiving any answer.

After they had done powwowing, I attempted to discourse with them about Christianity; but they soon scattered, and gave no opportunity. A view of these things, while I was entirely alone in the wilderness destitute of the society of any one that so much *named the name of Christ*, greatly sunk my spirits, so that I had no heart nor power to make any further attempts among them.

The Indians of this island many of them understand the English language, having formerly lived in Maryland near the white people, but are very v

ous, drunken, and profane, although not so *savage* those who have less acquaintance with the English. Their method of *charming* or conjuring over the sick, seems somewhat different from that of other Indians: and the whole of it perhaps is an imitation what seems, by Naaman's expression, 2 Kings v. to have been the custom of the ancient Heathens, or it seems chiefly to consist in their "striking their hands over the diseased," repeatedly stroking them, "and calling upon their gods," excepting the spurling of water, and some other frantic ceremonies common to the other *conjurations*.

When I was in these parts in May last I had an opportunity of learning many of the customs of the Indians: I then travelling more than an hundred and thirty miles upon the river above the English settlements; and had in that journey a view of persons of *seven or eight* distinct tribes, speaking so many different languages. But of all the sights I ever saw among them, none appeared so near a-kin to what is usually imagined of *infernal powers*; as the appearance of one who was a devout and zealous reformer, rather restorer, of what he supposed was the ancient religion of the Indians. He made his appearance in his *pontifical garb*, which was a coat of *er skins*, dressed with the hair on, and hanging down to his toes, a pair of bear-skin stockings, and a *wooden face*, painted the one half black and the other tawny, about the colour of an Indian's skin, with an extravagant mouth, cut very much awry; his face fastened to a bear-skin cap, which was drawn over his head. He advanced toward me with the instrument in his hand that he used for sacrifice in his *idolatrous worship* which was a dry *tertsifell*, with some corn in it, and the neck of it drawn on a piece of wood, which made a very convenient handle. As he came forward, he beat his tune with a *rattle*, and danced with all his might, but did not suffer any part of his body, not so much as his legs, to be seen: and no man would have guessed, by his appearance, that he could have been a human

human creature. When he came near me, I could not but shrink away from him, although it was the noon day, and I knew who it was, his appearance and gestures were so frightful. He had a house consecrated to religious uses, with divers images cut out upon the several parts of it; I went in and found the ground beat almost as hard as a rock with their frequent dancing.—I discoursed with him about Christianity, and some of my discourse he seemed to like, but some of it he disliked entirely. He told me that God had taught him his religion and that he never would turn from it, but wanted to find some that would join heartily with him in it for the Indians, he said, were grown very degenerate. He had thoughts, he said, of leaving all his friends, and travelling abroad, in order to find some that would join with him; for he believed God had some good people some where, that felt as he did. He had not always, he said, felt as he now did, but had *formerly* been like the rest of the Indians, until about four or five years ago: then, he said, his heart was very much distressed, so that he could not live among the Indians, but got away into the woods, and lived alone for some months. At length, he says, God shewed him what he should do; and since that time he had known God, and tried to serve him; and loved all men, be they who they would, so as he never did before.—He treated me with uncommon courtesy, and seemed to be hearty in it.—And was told by the Indians, that he opposed their drinking strong liquor with all his power; and if at any time he could not dissuade them from it, he would leave them, and go crying into the woods. It was manifest he had a set of religious notions that he had looked into *for himself*, and not taken for granted upon bare tradition; and he relished or disrelished whatever was spoken of a religious nature according as it either agreed or disagreed with *his standard*. And while I was discoursing he would sometimes say, “Now that I like: so God has taught me.” And some of his sentiments seemed very ju

Yet he utterly denied the being of a *devil*, and declared there was no such a creature known among the Indians of old times. He likewise told me, that departed souls all went southward, and that the difference between the good and bad was this, that the *former* were admitted into a beautiful town with *spiritual* walls, or walls agreeable to the nature of souls; and that the *latter* would for ever hover round those walls, and in vain attempt to get in. He seemed to be sincere, honest, and conscientious in his *own way*, which was more than I ever saw in any other Pagan; and I perceived he was looked upon, and derided amongst most of the Indians as a *precise zealot*. I must say, there was something in his temper that looked more like true religion than any thing I ever observed among other Heathens.

September 22. I made some further attempts to instruct the Indians on this island, but all to no purpose. They live so near the white people, that they are always in the way of strong liquor, as well as the ill examples of *nominal* Christians; which renders it unspeakably difficult to treat with them about Christianity.

[On Monday, September 23. He left the Indians, in order to his return to the Forks of Delaware, in a very weak state of body, and under dejection of mind, which continued the two first days of his journey.]

Thursday, September 26. I was still much disordered in body, and able to ride but slowly, I continued my journey however. Near night, I arrived at the Irish settlement, about fifteen miles from mine own house. This day, I was much exercised with a sense of my barrenness: and verily thought, there was no creature that had any true grace, but what was more spiritual and fruitful than I: I could not think that any of God's children made so poor a hand living to God as I.

*Forks of Delaware.*

October 1. I discoursed to the Indians here, and afterwards invited them to accompany, or if not, to follow me down to Crofweekfung as soon as their conveniency would admit; which invitation sundry of them chearfully accepted.

Saturday, October 5. I preached to my people at Crofweekfung, from John xiv. 1—6. The divine presence seemed to be in the assembly. Numbers were affected, and some comforted.

O what a difference is there between these and the Indians upon Susquahannah! To be with *those* seemed like being banished from God, and all his people; to be with *these* like being admitted into his family, and to the enjoyment of his presence! How great is the change lately made upon these Indians, who not many months ago were as thoughtless, and averse to Christianity, as those upon Susquahannah!

Lord's day, October 6. I preached in the forenoon from John x. 7—11. There was a considerable melting among my people; the young Christians were comforted and strengthened, and one or two persons newly awakened.

In the afternoon I discoursed on the story of the jailor, Acts xvi. and in the evening expounded Acts xx. 1—12. There was at this time a melting through the whole assembly. There was scarce a dry eye to be seen among them, and nothing but what tended to encourage and excite a Christian ardour and spirit of devotion.

After public service I withdrew, and the Indians continued praying among themselves for near two hours together; which exercises appeared to be attended with a blessed influence from on high.

I could not but earnestly wish that numbers of God's people had been present at this season, to see and hear these things which I am sure must refresh the heart of every true lover of Zion. To see those, who very lately were savage Pagans and idolaters, "having no hope, and without God in the world,"

now

now filled with a sense of divine love and grace, and worshipping the "Father in spirit and in truth," was not a little affecting; and especially to see them so tender and humble, as well as lively, fervent, and devout.

Monday, October 7. Being called by the church and people of East-Hampton on Long-Island, as a member of a council, to assist and advise in affairs of difficulty in that church, I set out on my journey this morning, before it was well light, and travelled to Elisabeth-Town.

[He prosecuted his journey with the other ministers that were sent for: and did not return till October 24.]

October 24. I discoursed from John iv. 13—1. There was a great attention, and an unaffected melting in the assembly. —It is surprising to see how eager they are of hearing the word of God. I have often thought they would cheerfully attend divine worship twenty-four hours together.

October 25. I discoursed to my people on the *resurrection* from Luke xx. 27—36. And when I came to mention the blessedness the good shall enjoy at that season; their final freedom from death, and sorrow; their equality to the *angels* in regard of their nearness to, and enjoyment of Christ; and their being the *children of God*, openly acknowledged by him *as such*; I say, when I mentioned these things, numbers of them were much affected, and melted with a view of this blessed state.

October 26. Being called to assist in the administration of the Lord's supper, in a neighbouring congregation, I invited my people to go with me, who embraced the opportunity cheerfully, and attended the discourses of that solemnity with diligence and affection, most of them now understanding something of the English language.

Lord's day, October 27. While I was preaching to a vast assembly of people abroad, who appeared generally easy and secure enough, there was one Indian woman, a stranger, who never heard me preach

before, nor ever regarded any thing about religion, (being now persuaded by some of her friends to come though much against her will,) was seized with a pressing concern for her soul, and soon after expressed a great desire of going home, (more than forty miles distant,) to call her husband, that he also might have a concern for his soul. Some other of the Indians also appeared to be affected with divine truths this day.

The pious people of the English (numbers of whom I had opportunity to converse with) seemed refreshed with seeing the Indians worship God in that devout and solemn manner, and could not but "glorify God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life."

October 28. I discoursed from Matth. xxii. 1—13. I was enabled to adapt my discourse to the capacities of my people, "I know not how," in a plain, easy, and familiar manner, beyond all that I could have done by the utmost study: and this, with as much freedom, as if I had been addressing a common audience, who had been instructed in Christianity all their days.

The word of God at this time seemed to fall upon the assembly with a divine power, especially toward the close of my discourse: there was both a sweet melting and bitter mourning in the audience.—The Christians were refreshed and comforted, convictions revived in others, and sundry persons newly awakened who had never been with us before; and so much of the divine presence appeared in the assembly, that it seemed, "this was no other than the gate of heaven." All that had any relish of divine things were even constrained to say, "Lord, it is good for us to be here!" If ever there was among my people an appearance of the New Jerusalem—"as a bride adorned for her husband," there was at this time. And so agreeable was the entertainment, that I could scarce tell how to leave the place.

Lord's day, November 23. I baptized *fourteen* Indians, six adults and eight children; one of these

was near *four score* years of age, and I have reason to hope God has brought her home to himself: two of the others were men of *fifty* years old, who had been singular, even among the Indians, for their wickedness; one of them had been a *murderer*, and both notorious drunkards, as well as excessive quarrelsome; but now I cannot but hope both are really changed. I deferred their *baptism* for many weeks, that I might have more opportunities to observe the fruits of those impressions they had been under. Indeed there was not one of the adults but had given me grounds to hope, that God had wrought a good work in their hearts.

Nov. 4. There were sundry of the persons lately come from remote places, that were now brought under deep concern for their souls; particularly one, who not long since came half drunk, and railed on us, and attempted to disturb us while engaged in divine worship, was so distressed, that she seemed unable to get any ease without an interest in Christ. There were many tears and affectionate groans in the assembly in general, some weeping for themselves, others for their friends. And tho' persons are doubtless much easier affected now, than they were in the beginning to this religious concern, when tears and cries for their souls were things unheard of among them; yet, their affection in general appeared *enuine* and *unfeigned*; and especially in those newly wakened.

I baptized a child this day, and perceived several of the baptized persons affected, as being thereby minded of their own solemn engagements.

I have now baptized in all *forty-seven* persons of the Indians, twenty-three adults, and twenty-four children; thirty-five of them belonging to these parts, and the rest to the forks of Delaware: and they have none of them as yet been a disgrace to their profession by any unbecoming behaviour.

Before I proceed, I would make a few remarks.

And *1st*, It is remarkable that God began this work among the Indians at a time when I had the

least prospect of seeing a work of grace among them. My bodily strength being then much wasted by a tedious journey to Susquahannah, my mind exceedingly depressed with a view of the unseasonableness of my labours, had little reason to hope that God had made me instrumental of the saving conversion of any of the Indians, whence I was ready to look upon myself as a burden to the society that employed me in this business. I began to entertain serious thoughts of giving up my *mission*; and almost resolved I would do so, at the conclusion of the present year, if I had then no better prospect in my work than I had hitherto had.

In this frame of mind I first visited these Indians at Crofweekfung, apprehending it was my duty to make some attempts for their conversion, though I cannot say, I had any hope of success, my spirits were now so extremely sunk.

And yet *this* was the very season that God saw fit to begin this glorious work in! And thus he “ordained strength out of weakness,” by making bare his almighty arm at a time when *all hopes* and *human probabilities* most evidently failed.—“Whence I learn that it is good to follow the path of duty, though in the midst of darkness and discouragement.”

2dly, It is remarkable how God, in a manner almost *unaccountable*, called these Indians together to be instructed; and how he seized their minds with the most solemn concern as fast as they came to the place where his word was preached. When I first came into these parts, I found not one man at the place I visited, but only *four* women and a few children: but before I had been here many days they gathered from all quarters, some from more than twenty miles distant; and when I made there a second visit, some came more than forty miles to hear me.

And many came without any intelligence of what was going on here, and consequently without any design, so much as to gratify their curiosity; so that it seemed as if God had summoned them together from

from all quarters for nothing else but to deliver his message to them.

Nor is it less surprising that they were one after another affected with a solemn concern for their souls, almost as soon as they came upon the spot where divine truths were taught them. I could not but think, their coming to this place was like Saul and his messengers coming among the prophets; they no sooner came but they prophesied: and these were almost as soon affected with a sense of their sin and misery, and with an earnest concern for deliverance, as they made their appearance in our assembly.— After this work of *grace* began with power among them, it was common for *strangers* of the Indians, before they had been with us one day, to be deeply convinced of their sin and misery, and to inquire with great solicitude, “What they should do to be saved?”

*3dly*, It is likewise remarkable how God preserved these poor ignorant Indians from being prejudiced against me, and the truths I taught them. There were many attempts made by some of the *white* people to prejudice them against, or fright them from Christianity. They sometimes told them, the Indians were well enough already:—that there was no need of all this *noise* about Christianity:—that if they were Christians, they would be in no better, no safer, or happier state, than they were already in.

Sometimes they told them, that I was a *knave*, a *deceiver*: that I daily taught them lies, and had no other design but to impose upon them.

And when none of these suggestions would avail, they told the Indians, “My design was to gather together as large a body of them as I possibly could, and then sell them to England for slaves.” Nothing could be more likely to terrify the Indians, they being naturally of a jealous disposition, and the most averse to a state of servitude perhaps of any people living.

But

But all these Insinuations (through divine goodness) constantly turned against the *authors* of them and only served to engage the affections of the Indians more firmly to me: for they could not but observe, that the persons who endeavoured to imbitter their minds against me, were altogether unconcerned about their own souls, and not only so, but vicious and profane; and thence could not but argue, that if they had no concern for their *own*, it was not likely they should have for the souls of *others*.

It seems yet the more wonderful that the Indians were preserved from once hearkening to these suggestions, as I was an utter stranger among them, and could give them no assurance of my sincere affection, by any thing that was past,—while the persons that insinuated these things were their old acquaintance, who had had frequent opportunities of gratifying them with strong drink, and consequently had the greatest interest in their affections.

4thly, Nor is it less wonderful how God was pleased to provide a *remedy* for my want of skill in the Indian language, by remarkably fitting my interpreter for, and assisting him in the performance of his work. It might be supposed I must labour under a vast disadvantage in addressing the Indians by an interpreter, and that divine truths would unavoidably lose much of their *energy*, by coming to the audience from a *second hand*. But although this has often been the case in times past, when my interpreter had little sense of divine things, yet now it is quite otherwise. I cannot think my addresses to the Indians ordinarily since the beginning of this season of grace, have lost any thing of the power with which they were made, unless it were sometimes for want of pertinent expressions in the Indian language; which difficulty could not have been much redressed by my personal acquaintance with it. My interpreter had before gained some good degree of *doctrinal* knowledge, whereby he was capable of understanding and communicating the *meaning* of my discourses, and that without being obliged to interpret word for word

word. He had likewise an *experimental* acquaintance with divine things; and it pleased God at this season to inspire his mind with longing desires for the conversion of the Indians, and to give him admirable zeal and fervency in addressing them. And it is remarkable, that when I was favoured with any *pecial assistance*, and enabled to speak with more than common *freedom, fervency, and power*, he was usually affected in the same manner almost instantly, and seemed at once quickened and enabled to speak in the same *pathetic* language, and under the same influence that I did. And a *surprising energy* often accompanied the word at such seasons; so that the face of the whole assembly would be apparently changed almost in an instant, and tears and sobs became common among them.

He likewise took pains day and night to repeat and inculcate upon the minds of the Indians the truths I taught them daily; and this not from spiritual pride, but from a spirit of faithfulness, and an honest concern for their souls.

And thus God has manifested that, without bestowing on me the *gift of tongues*, he could find a way wherein I might be effectually enabled to convey the truths of his glorious gospel to the minds of these poor benighted Pagans.

*Lastly*, The *effects* of this work have been very remarkable. I doubt not but that many of these people have gained more knowledge of divine truths, since June last, than could have been instilled into their minds by the most diligent use of proper means for whole *years* together, without such a divine influence. Their Pagan notions and *idolatrous* practices seem to be entirely abandoned. They are regularly disposed in the affairs of *marriage*; an instance whereof I have given in my Journal of August 14. They seem generally divorced from *drunkenness*, their darling vice, and the "sin that easily besets them:" so that I do not know of more than two or three who have been any steady hearers, that have drank to excess since I first visited them, although before it was common for  
some

some or other of them to be drunk almost every day and some of them seem now to fear this sin in particular more than death itself. A principle of honesty and justice appears in many of them, and they seem concerned to discharge their old debts, which they have neglected, and, perhaps, scarce thought of for years past. Their manner of living is much more decent and comfortable than formerly. *Love* reigns among them, especially those who have experienced a real change: and I never saw any appearance of *bitterness* or *ensoriousness*, nor any disposition to "esteem themselves better than others."

As their sorrows under *convictions* have been great and pressing, so many of them have since appeared to "rejoice with joy unspeakable." And yet their consolations do not incline them to *lightness*; but are attended with *solemnity*, and with *tears*, and brokenness of heart. And in this respect some of them have been surpris'd at themselves, and have with concern observed to me, that "when their hearts have been glad," "they could not help crying for all."

Upon the whole, here are all the evidences of remarkable work of grace, that can reasonably be looked for. May the *great Author* maintain and promote the same *here*, and propagate it *every where*, till "the whole earth be filled with his glory!"

I have now rode more than three thousand miles since the beginning of March last; and almost the whole of it has been in my own business as a *missionary* upon the design of propagating *Christian knowledge* among the Indians. I have taken pains to look out for a *colleague*, or *companion*, to travel with me; but have not as yet found any person qualified and disposed for this good work.

As these poor Pagans stood in need of having "line upon line, and precept upon precept," in order to their being grounded in the principles of Christianity; so I preached "publicly, and taught from house to house," almost every day for *whole weeks* together. And my *public* discourses did not then make up the one half of my work, while there were so many con-

stantly

tantly coming to me with that important inquiry, "What must we do to be saved?" And yet I can say, (to the praise of God, that the success with which my labours were crowned, unspeakably more than compensated for the labour itself, and was likewise a great means of carrying me through the business and fatigues, which my nature would have sunk under, without such an encouraging prospect. But although this success has afforded matter of support, comfort, and thankfulness: yet in this season I have found great need of assistance in my work, and have been much oppressed for want of *one* to bear a *part* of my labours and hardships.——

"May the Lord of the harvest send forth other labourers into this part of his harvest, that those who sit in darkness may see great light, and that the whole earth may be filled with the knowledge of himself!"

[Tuesday, November 5. He left the Indians, and spent the remaining part of this week in travelling to various parts of New-Jersey, in order to get a *collection* for the use of the Indians, and to obtain a *school-master* to instruct them.]

Lord's day, November 10. [At Elizabeth-Town] preached in the forenoon from 2 Cor. v. 20. God was pleased to give me freedom and fervency; and the presence of God seemed to be in the assembly; numbers were affected, and there were many tears among them. In the afternoon, I preached from Luke xiv. 22. "And yet there is room." I was favoured with divine assistance in the first prayer, and poured out my soul to God with a filial temper; the living God also assisted me in sermon.

\*Friday, November 15. I could not cross the ferry by reason of the violence of the wind; nor could I enjoy any place of retirement at the ferry-house. Yet God gave me some satisfaction in meditation, and fixing up my heart to God in the midst of company. And although some were drinking and talking profanely; yet my mind was calm and composed. And could not but bless God, that I was not like to spend an eternity in such company.

Saturday

Saturday, November 16. I crossed the ferry about ten o'clock; arrived at Elifabeth-Town near night. I was in a composed frame of mind, and felt an entire resignation with respect to a loss I had lately sustained, in having my horse stolen from me the last Wednesday night.

Friday, November 22. I rode to Mr. Tennent's and from thence to Crofweekfung. Oh that I could fill up all my time, whether in the house or by the way, for God! I was enabled this day to give up my soul to God, and put all my concerns into his hands and found real consolation in the thought of being entirely at his disposal, and having no will or interest of my own. I have received my *all* from God. Oh that I could return my *all* to God! Surely God is worthy of my highest affection, and most devout adoration; he is infinitely worthy, that I should make him my last end, and live for ever to him: Oh that I might never more, in any one instance, live to myself!

Lord's day, November 24. I preached from the story of Zaccheus. When I insisted upon the *salvation that comes to the sinner*, upon his becoming a true believer, the word seemed to be attended with divine power.—Numbers were much affected;—former convictions were revived;—one or two persons newly awakened;—and a most affectionate engagement in divine service appeared among them universally.

November 26. I was favoured with freedom and fervency in my discourse. Many wept and sobbed affectionately, and scarce any appeared unconcerned in the whole assembly. The influence that seized the audience appeared gentle, and yet deeply affected the heart. It excited in the persons under convictions of their lost state, heavy groans and tears:—and in others who had obtained comfort, a sweet and humble melting. It seemed like the gentle but steady showers that effectually water the earth.

The persons lately awakened, were deeply distressed, and appeared earnestly solicitous to obtain

an interest in Christ: and some of them, in anguish of spirit, said, "They knew not what to do, nor how to get their wicked hearts changed."

November 28. After public service was over, I asked one of the Indians who wept most affectionately, "What she now wanted?" She replied, "Oh to be with Christ! she did not know how to stay." This was a blessed refreshing season to the religious people in general. The Lord Jesus Christ seemed to manifest his divine glory to them, as when *transfigured* before his disciples. And they, were ready universally to say, "Lord, it is good for us to be here."

The influence of God's word was not *confined* to those who had given evidences of being truly gracious, though I calculated my discourse for, and directed it *chiefly* to such: but it appeared to be a season of divine power in the whole assembly; so that most were, in some measure affected. And one aged man in particular, lately awakened, was now brought under deep and pressing concern, and was earnestly inquisitive "how he might find Jesus Christ."

God seems still to vouchsafe the influence of his blessed Spirit, in all our meetings for divine worship.

November 30. I preached near night, after having spent some hours in private conference with some of my people. I explained the story of the rich man and Lazarus, Luke xvi. 19. 26. The word made powerful impressions upon many, especially while I discoursed of the blessedness of "Lazarus in Abraham's bosom." *This* I could perceive, affected them much more than what I spoke of the *rich man's* torments. And thus it has been usually with them. They have appeared much more affected with the *comfortable* than the *dreadful* truths of God's word. And that which has distressed many of them under convictions, is, that they wanted, and could not obtain the happiness of the godly; they have often appeared to be more affected with *this*, than with the *terrors* of hell. But whatever be the *means* of their awakening, it is plain, numbers are made *deeply sensible* of their sin and misery, the wickedness of their

own hearts, their *utter inability* to help themselves, or come to Christ for help, without divine assistance.

Lord's day, December 1. I gave them particular cautions and directions relating to their conduct in divers respects. And pressed them to *watchfulness* in all their deportment, seeing they were encompassed with those that "waited for their halting," and who stood ready to draw them into *temptations* of every kind, and then to expose religion on their account.

Monday, December 9. I spent most of the day in procuring provisions, in order to my setting up house-keeping among the Indians.

Tuesday, December 10. I was engaged in the same business as yesterday. Towards night I got into my own house.\*

December 12. I preached from the parable of the ten virgins, Matth. xxv. The divine power seemed to attend this discourse, in which I was favoured with *uncommon* freedom and plainness of address, and enabled to open divine truths, in a manner *beyond myself*.—There appeared in many an affectionate concern for their souls: And it was refreshing to see them melted into tears; some with a *sense* of divine love, and some for *want* of it.

Lord's day, December 15. I preached to the Indians from Luke xiii. 24. 28, Divine truths fell with weight upon the audience. Near night I discoursed to them again from Matth. xxv. 31. to 46. At which season also, the word appeared to be accompanied with divine influence, and made powerful impressions upon the assembly in general, as well as upon divers persons in a very particular manner. This was an amazing season of grace! "The word of the Lord," "was quick and powerful, sharper than a two-edged sword." The assembly was *deeply* wrought upon; and the impressions made by the word of God appeared

\* This is the third house that he built to dwell in by himself among the Indians: the first at Kaunaumuck in the county of Albany: the second at the Forks of Delaware in Pennsylvania; and now this at Crofsweefung in New-Jersey.

appeared solid and rational, worthy of the solemn truths by means of which they were produced.

O how did the hearts of the hearers seem to bow under the weight of divine truths! And how evident did it now appear that they *received* and *felt* them, "not as the word of man, but as the word of God!"

December 16. There was much affection and concern in the assembly; especially one woman appeared in great distress. She was brought to such an *agony* in seeking after Christ, that the sweat ran off her face for a considerable time, although the evening was very cold; and her bitter cries were the most affecting indication of the *inward* anguish of her heart.

Saturday, December 21. My people having now attained to a considerable degree of knowledge in the principles of Christianity, I thought it proper to set up a *catechetical lecture*; and this evening attempted something in *that form*; proposing questions to them, receiving their answers, and then explaining and insisting as appeared proper upon each question. After which I endeavoured to make some practical improvement of the whole.—They were able readily and *rationally* to answer many important questions: so that I found their knowledge to exceed my expectations.—In the improvement of my discourse, when I came to open the blessedness of those who have so great and glorious a God, as had been spoken of, "for their everlasting friend and portion," sundry were much affected; and especially when I exhorted them "to be reconciled to God," through his dear Son, and *thus* to secure an interest in his everlasting favour.

Lord's day, December 22. I discoursed upon the story of the young man in the gospel, Matth. ix. 16.—22. God made it a seasonable word, to some souls.

After my labours with the Indians, I spent some time in writing; and was much wearied with the labours of the day. I am conscious to myself that my labours are as great and constant as my nature will bear, and that ordinarily I go to the extent of my

strength; so that I do all I can; but the misery is, I do not labour with that *heavenly* temper, that single eye to the *glory* of God, that I long for.

There were fundry persons of the Indians newly come here, who had frequently lived among Quakers; and being more civilized than the generality of the Indians, they had imbibed some of the Quakers errors, especially this, That if men would but live according to the dictates of their own consciences, (or the *light within*,) there is no doubt of their salvation.—These persons I found much worse to deal with than those who are wholly under Pagan darkness, who make no *pretences* to knowledge in Christianity, nor have any *self-righteous* foundation to stand upon. However, they all, except one, appeared now convinced, that this was not sufficient to salvation; since Christ himself had declared it so in the case of the young man. And seemed in some measure concerned to obtain that change of heart which I had been labouring to shew them the necessity of.

This was likewise a season of *comfort* to some souls, and in particular to one, who never before obtained any settled comfort.

When I came to enquire of her, how she got relief from the distresses she had lately been under, she answered in broken English,\* “ Me try, me try, save myself, last my strength be all gone, (meaning her ability to save herself,) could not me stir bit further. Den last, me forced let Jesus Christ alone, send me hell if he please.” I said, But you was not willing to go to hell, was you? She replied,† “ Could not me help it. My heart he would wicked for all. Could not me make him good:” I asked her, How she got out of this case? She answered still

\* In proper English thus, “ I tried and tried to save myself, till at last my strength was all gone, and I could not stir any further. Then at last I was forced to let Jesus Christ alone to send me to hell if he pleased.”

† In plain English thus, “ I could not help it. My heart would be wicked for all I could do, I could not make it good.”

still in the same broken language, † “ By, by my heart be glad desperately.” I asked her why her heart was glad? She replied, “ Glad my heart Jesus Christ do what he please with me. Den me tink, grad my heart Jesus Christ send me hell. Did not me care where he put me, me love him for all.”

And she could not readily be convinced, but that she was willing to go to hell, if Christ was pleased to send her there. Though the truth evidently was, her will was so swallowed up in the divine will, that she could not frame any hell in her imagination that would be dreadful, provided it was the will of God to send her to it.

December 25. The Indians having been used upon Christmas-days to drink and revel among the white people, I thought proper to call them together, and discourse to them upon divine things: which I accordingly did from the parable of the barren fig-tree, Luke xiii. 6—9. The power of God appeared in the assembly, by awakening several stupid creatures, that were scarce ever moved with any concern before. And the impressions made upon the assembly in general, seemed not *superficial*; but *deep* and heart-affecting. O how ready did they appear to comply with every thing they were convinced was their duty! God was in the midst of us of a truth, bowing and melting stubborn hearts! How many tears and sobs were then to be seen and heard among us! What liveliness and strict attention! What eagerness and intenseness of mind! They seemed to watch and wait for the dropping of God's word, as the thirsty earth for the “ former and latter rain.”

December 26. This evening I was visited by a person under great spiritual exercise. She was a

N 3

woman

† “ By and by my heart was exceeding glad.—My heart was glad that Jesus Christ would do with me what he pleased. Then I thought my heart would be glad although Christ should send me to hell. I did not care where he put me, I should love him for all; i. e. do what he would with me.”

woman of more than *four-score* years old, and appeared to be much broken and very *childish* through age, so that it seemed impossible for man to instil into her mind any *notions* of divine things.—She was led by the hand into my house, and appeared in extreme anguish. I asked her, what ailed her? She answered, “That her heart was distressed, and she feared she should never find Christ.” I asked her, when she began to be concerned? She answered to this effect, That she had heard me preach many times, but never “felt it in her heart” ’till the last Sabbath; and then it came, she said, “all one as if a needle had been thrust into her heart;” since which time she had no rest day or night. She added, that on the evening before Christmas, a number of Indians being together at the house where she was, and discoursing about *Christ*, their talk *pricked her heart*, so that she could not sit up, but fell down on her bed; at which time *she went away*, (as she expressed it) and felt as if she dreamed, and yet is confident she did not dream. When she was thus gone, she saw, she says, two paths, one appeared very broad and crooked; and that turned to the left hand. The other appeared straight and very narrow; and that went up the hill to the right hand. She travelled, she said, for some time up the narrow right-hand path, ’till at length something seemed to obstruct her journey. She sometimes called it darkness, and sometimes seemed to compare it to a block or bar. She then remembered, she says, what she had heard me say about “striving to enter in at the strait gate,” (although she took little notice of it at the time) and thought she would climb over this bar. But just as she was thinking of this, she came back again, as she termed it, meaning that she came to herself; whereupon her soul was extremely distressed, apprehending she had now turned back and forsaken Christ, and that there was therefore no hope of mercy for her.

I then proposed to her the provision made in the gospel for the salvation of sinners, and the ability and willingness of Christ “to save to the uttermost all  
(old

(old as well as young) "that come to him." To which she seemed to give a hearty assent. But instantly replied, "Ay, but I cannot come; my wicked heart will not come to Christ; I do not know how to come." And this she spoke in anguish of spirit, striking her breast, with tears in her eyes, and with such *earnestness* in her looks as was indeed affecting.

She seems to be really convinced of her sin and misery, and her need of a change of heart: and her concern is abiding and constant. So that nothing appears but that this exercise may have a saving issue. And indeed there is ground to hope for it, seeing she is solicitous to obtain an interest in Christ, that her heart, (as she expresses it) and prays day and night.

December 28. I discoursed to my people in the catechetical method I lately entered upon. And in the improvement of my discourse, wherein I was comparing man's *present* with his *primitive* state; and pressing sinners to take a view of their deplorable circumstances without Christ; as also to strive that they may obtain an interest in him; the Lord granted a remarkable influence of his blessed Spirit, and there was a great concern in the assembly: many were melted into tears, and the impressions made upon them seemed *deep* and heart affecting. And in particular, there were two or three persons who appeared to be reduced almost to extremity; being convinced of the impossibility of helping themselves, or mending their own hearts; and upon the *point* of giving up all hope *in themselves*, and venturing upon Christ as naked, helpless, and *undone*.

Lord's day, December 29. I preached from John iii. 1—5. A number of white people were present, as is usual upon the Sabbath. The discourse seemed to have a *silent*, but *deep* and *piercing* influence upon the audience. Many wept and sobbed affectionately. And there were some tears among the white people, as well as the Indians. Some could not refrain from crying out. But the impressions made upon their hearts,

hearts, appeared chiefly by the extraordinary earnestness of their attention, and their heavy sighs and tears.

After public worship was over, I went to my house, proposing to preach again after a short intermission. But they soon came in, one after another, with tears in their eyes, to know "what they should do to be saved." And the divine Spirit in such a manner, set home upon their hearts what I spoke to them, that the house was soon filled with cries and groans.—They all flocked together upon this occasion, and those whom I had reason to think in a Christless state, were almost universally seized with concern for their souls.

It was an amazing season of *power* among them, and seemed as if God had "bowed the heavens and come down." So astonishingly prevalent was the operation upon *old* as well as young, that it seemed as if God was about to convert *all the world*. And I was ready to think *then*, that I should never again despair of the conversion of any man or woman living.

It is impossible to give a just description of the appearance of things at this season. A number were rejoicing that God had not taken away the influence of his blessed Spirit.—Refreshed to see so many "striving to enter in at the strait gate;"—and animated with such concern for them, that they wanted "to push them forward," as some of them expressed it.—At the same time numbers both of men and women, old and young, might be seen in tears, and some in anguish of spirit, appearing in their very countenances, like condemned malefactors going towards the place of execution: so that there seemed a lively emblem of the solemn day of accounts; a mixture of heaven and hell; of joy unspeakable, and anguish inexpressible.

The concern was *such*, that I could not pretend to have any *formal* religious exercise among them; but spent the time in discoursing to one and another, sometimes all together, and concluded with prayer.

*Such*

Such were their circumstances, that I could scarce have *half an hour's* rest from speaking from about half an hour before twelve o'clock, (at which time I began public worship) 'till past *seven* at night.

December 30. I was visited by four or five young persons under concern for their souls, most of whom were very lately awakened. They wept much while I discoursed to them, and endeavoured to press upon them the necessity of *flying* to Christ, without delay, for salvation.

December 31. I spent some hours this day in visiting my people from house to house: and scarce left a house, without leaving some or other of its inhabitants in tears, solicitously engaged to obtain an interest in Christ.

The Indians are now gathered together from all quarters to this place, and have built them little cottages, so that more than *twenty* families live within a quarter of a mile of me. A very convenient situation in regard of both public and private instruction.

Wednesday, January 1. 1745-6.—I am this day beginning a *New Year*; and God has carried me through numerous trials and labours in the past. He has amazingly supported my feeble frame; for "having obtained help of God, I continue to this day." O that I might live nearer to God, this year than I did the last! The business that I have been enabled to go through, I know, has been as great as nature could bear up under, and what would have sunk me quite, without special support. But alas! though I have done the labours and endured the trials, with what spirit I have done the one, and borne the other? How cold has my heart often been! and how little have I eyed the glory of God! I have found, that I could have no peace without filling up all my time with labours; and thus "necessity has been laid upon me;" yea, in that respect, I have loved to labour; but I could not sensibly labour *for God*, as I would have done. May I for the future be enabled more sensibly to make the glory of God my *all*!

This

This day I spent some considerable time in visiting my people again, and found scarce one but what was under some serious impressions.

January 2. I visited some persons newly come among us, who had scarce ever heard any thing of Christianity (but the name). I endeavoured to instruct them in the first principles of religion, in the most easy and familiar manner I could.

There are strangers from remote parts almost continually dropping in, so that I have occasion repeatedly to open and inculcate the *first principles* of Christianity.

Near night I proposed to have proceeded in my usual method of catechising. But while we were engaged in the first prayer, the power of God came upon the assembly in so remarkable a manner, and so many appeared under pressing concern, that I thought it much more expedient to insist upon the plentiful provision made for the redemption of perishing sinners, and to press them to a *speedy* acceptance of the *great salvation*; than to ask them questions about *doctrinal* points.

I baptized two persons this day; one adult and one child.

The woman has discovered an heavenly frame of mind, from her first reception of comfort. One morning in particular she came to see me, discovering an unusual joy in her countenance; and when I inquired the reason of it, she replied, "That God had made her feel that it was *right* for him to do as he pleased with all things? She moreover inquired, whether I was not sent to preach to the Indians, by some good people a great way off. I replied, Yes, by the good people in Scotland. She answered, that her heart loved those good people so, the evening before, that she could scarce help praying for them all night, her heart would go to God for them."

Wednesday, January 8. My heart was drawn out after God: my soul was refreshed and quickned; I had great hopes of the ingathering of precious souls.

to Christ; not only among my own people, but others also. I was sweetly resigned and composed under my bodily weakness; and was willing to live or die, and desirous to labour for God to the utmost of my strength.

Friday, January 10. My soul was in a calm, composed frame, and my heart filled with love to all the world; and Christian simplicity and tenderness seemed to prevail and reign with me. Near night, I visited a serious baptist-minister, and had some agreeable conversation with him.

January 13. I was visited by divers persons under deep concern; one of whom was newly awakened. — It is a most agreeable work to treat with souls who are solicitously inquiring “ what they shall do to be saved.” And as we are never to “ be weary in well-doing,” so the obligation is peculiarly strong when the work is so lively. And yet my health is so much impaired, and my spirits so wasted with my labours, and solitary manner of living, (there being no human creature in the house with me,) that their repeated and almost incessant application to me for help and direction, are sometimes exceeding burdensome. And what contributes much toward this difficulty is, that I am obliged to spend *much* time communicating a *little* matter to them; there being often many things necessary to be premised, before I can speak directly to what I principally aim at; which things would readily be taken for granted, where there was a competency of knowledge.

Lord’s day, January 19. I catechised in my ordinary method. Numbers were much affected. — Convictions powerfully revived. — Divers of the Christians refreshed and strengthened. — And one weary *heavy laden* soul, I have reason to hope was brought to true rest and solid comfort in Christ.

He told me, he had often heard me say, that persons must *see* and *feel* themselves helpless and *undone*; that they must give up all hope of saving themselves by their *own doings*, in order to their coming to Christ for salvation. And he had long been striving after this;

this; supposing this would be an excellent frame of mind: that God would have respect to *this* frame, and bestow eternal life upon him.—But when he came to feel himself in this helpless *undone* condition, he found it quite contrary to all his thoughts: so that it was not the *same*, nor indeed any thing *like* the frame he had been seeking after. Instead of its being a *good* frame of mind, he now found nothing but *badness* in himself, and saw it was for ever impossible for him to make himself any better. He was amazed he had never *before* seen that it was utterly impossible for him, by all his contrivances and endeavours, to do any thing *that way*.—Instead of imagining that God would be pleased with him for the sake of this frame of mind, he saw clearly it would be just with God to send him to eternal misery; and that there was *no goodness* in what he then felt; for he could not help seeing, that he was naked, sinful, and miserable, and there was nothing in such a sight to deserve God's love or pity.

In *this* frame of mind he came to public worship this evening, and while I was inviting sinners to come to Christ naked and empty, without *any* goodness of *their own* to recommend them to his acceptance; he thought, that he had often tried to come and give up his heart to Christ, and he used to hope, that some time or other he should be *able* to do so. But now he was convinced *he could not*, and it seemed utterly vain for him ever to try *any more*: nor did he now hope for a better opportunity hereafter, as he had formerly done, because he saw, and was fully convinced, his own strength would for ever fail.

While he was musing in this manner, he saw, he said, with his heart (which is a common phrase among them) something that was unspeakably good and lovely, and what he had never seen before; and “this stole away his heart whether he would or no.” He did not, he said, know what it was he saw. He did not say, “this is Jesus Christ;” but it was such glory and beauty as he never saw before. He did not now give away his heart *so* as he had formerly attempted to do, but it *went away of itself* after that glory he

he then discovered. He used to try to make a bargain with Christ, to give up his heart to him, that he might have eternal life *for it*. But now he thought nothing about himself, but his mind was wholly taken up with the unspeakable excellency of what he then beheld.

After some time he was wonderfully pleased with the way of salvation by Christ: so that it seemed unspeakably better to be saved altogether by the *mere free grace* of God in Christ, than to have *any hand* in saving himself.—And the consequence is, that he appears to retain a relish of divine things, and to maintain a life of true religion.

Lord's day, January 26. After public worship, I was in a sweet and solemn frame of mind, thankful to God that he had made me in some measure faithful in addressing precious souls, but grieved that I had been no more fervent in my work; and tenderly affected towards all the world, longing that every sinner might be saved; and could not have entertained any bitterness towards the worst enemy living. In the evening, I rode to Elisabeth-Town: while riding I was almost constantly engaged in lifting up my heart to God, lest I should lose that sweet heavenly solemnity and composure of soul I enjoyed. Afterwards, I was pleased, to think, that God *reigneth*; and thought, I could never be uneasy with any of his dispensations; but must be entirely satisfied, whatever trials he should cause me or his church to encounter. I never felt more divine serenity and composure of mind: I could freely have left the dearest earthly friend, for the society of "angels, and spirits of just men made perfect:" my affections soared aloft to the blessed Author of every dear enjoyment: I viewed the emptiness and unsatisfactory nature of the most desirable earthly objects, any further than God is seen in them: and longed for a life of spirituality and inward purity; without which, I saw, there could be no true pleasure.

January 28. The Indians in these parts having in times past run themselves in debt by their exces-

five drinking; and some having taken the advantage of them, and arrested fundry of them; whereby it was supposed their hunting lands might speedily be taken from them. I being sensible that they could not subsist together in these parts, if these lands should drop out of their hands, thought it my duty to use my utmost endeavours to prevent it. And having acquainted the gentlemen concerned in this *mission* with the affair, they thought it proper to expend the money they had been collecting for the *religious* interests of the Indians, (at least a part of it,) for the discharging of their debts, and securing of these lands.—And having received orders from them, I answered, in behalf of the Indians, *Eighty-two pounds five shillings*, New-Jersey currency.

January 31. This day the person I had engaged for a *school-master* among the Indians, arrived among us, and was heartily welcomed by my people.—Whereupon I distributed several dozen of *primers* among the children and young people.

February 1, 1745-6. My school-master entered upon his business among the Indians.—He has generally about thirty children and young persons in his school in the day time, and about *fifteen* married people in his evening-school. The number of the latter sort of persons being less than it would be, if they could be more constant at home.

In the evening I catechised in my usual method. Towards the close of my discourse, a surprising power seemed to attend the word. One man considerably in years, who had been a remarkable drunkard, a conjurer and murderer, that was awakened some months before, was now brought to great extremity, so that he trembled for hours together, and apprehended himself just dropping into hell, without any power to rescue or relieve himself.—Divers others appeared under great concern as well as he, and solicitous to obtain a saving change.

[Monday, February 10. He set out on a journey to the Forks of Delaware, to visit the Indians there. He performed the journey under great weakness, and sometimes

sometimes was exercised with much pain. He arrived at his own house at the Forks, on Friday.]

I baptized three persons, two adults, and one child. There was a considerable melting in the assembly, while I was administering the ordinance.

God has been pleased to own and bless the administration of *this*, as well as of his other *ordinances*, among the Indians. There are some here that have been powerfully awakened at seeing others baptized. And some that have obtained relief and comfort, just in the season when this ordinance has been administered.

Toward night I catechised, God made this a powerful season. There were many affected.—Former convictions were powerfully revived. There was likewise one, who had been a vile drunkard, remarkably awakened. He appeared to be in great anguish of soul, wept and trembled, and continued so to do till near midnight.—There was also a poor *heavy laden* soul, who had been long under spiritual distress, that was now brought to a comfortable *calm*, and told me, “She now saw and felt it was right God should do with her as he pleased.” And added, that the *heavy burden* she had lain under, was now removed: that she felt she never could do any thing to save herself, but must perish for ever if Christ did not *do all* for her. But Christ could save her, though she could *do nothing* to save herself.

Lord's day, February 16. Knowing that divers of the Indians in those parts were obstinately set against Christianity, thought it proper to have some of my people from Crossweeklung with me, in order to converse with them; hoping it might be a means to convince them of the truth, to see and hear some of their own nation discoursing of divine things, and manifesting earnest desires that others might be brought out of Heathenish darkness, as themselves were.

And having taken *half a dozen* of the most serious and knowing persons, I this day met with them and the Indians of this place, (sundry of whom could not have been prevailed upon to attend the meeting, had

it not been for these Indians that accompanied me) and preached to them.—Some of them who had, in times past, been extremely averse to Christianity, now behaved soberly; tho' others laughed and mocked. However the word of God fell with such weight and power, that several seemed to be stunned, and expressed a willingness to "hear me again of these matters."

After public worship I spent some time to convince those that mocked, of the truth and importance of what I had been insisting upon; and I had reason to think, that my endeavours took effect upon one of the worst of them.

Those few Indians then present, who used to be my hearers in these parts, (some having removed from hence to Crofweekfung,) seemed glad to see me again, although they had been so much attacked by some of the opposing Pagans, that they were almost afraid to manifest their friendship.

In the evening I was in a composed frame of mind. It was exceeding refreshing to think, that God had been with me, affording me some good measure of assistance. I found freedom in prayer and thanksgiving to God; and found my soul sweetly enlarged in prayer for dear friends and acquaintance. Blessed be the name of the Lord, that ever I am enabled to do any thing for his interest and kingdom. Blessed be God who enables me to be faithful. I enjoyed more resolution for God, and more refreshment of spirit, than I have been favoured with for many weeks past.

February 17. I discoursed from Acts viii. 5—8. A divine influence seemed to attend the word. Sundry of the Indians here appeared to be somewhat awakened, and manifested a concern by their earnest attention, tears and sobs. My people from Crofweekfung continued with them day and night, repeating and inculcating the truths I had taught them: and sometimes prayed and sung psalms among them; discoursing with each other, in their hearing of the great things God had done for *them*, and for the  
the

the Indians from whence they came : which seemed to take more effect upon them, than when they directed their discourses immediately to them.

February 18. I preached to an assembly of Irish people near fifteen miles distant from the Indians.

February 19. I preached to the Indians again, after having spent a considerable time in conversing with them privately. There appeared a great solemnity, and some concern and affection among the Indians belonging to these parts, as well as a sweet melting among those who came with me. — Divers of the Indians here seemed to have their prejudices removed, and appeared well disposed to hear the word of God.

February 20. I preached to a small assembly of High-Dutch people, who had seldom heard the gospel preached, and were, (some of them at least) very ignorant; but have divers of them lately been put upon an inquiry after the way of salvation. They gave wonderful attention, and some of them were much affected, and afterwards said, (as I was informed) that they never had been so much enlightened about the way of salvation in their whole lives before. They requested me to tarry with them, or come again and preach to them. And it grieved me that I could not comply with their request, for I could not but be affected with their circumstances; they being as “sheep not having a shepherd.”

February 21. I preached to a number of people, many of them Low-Dutch. Sundry of the fore-mentioned High-Dutch attended the sermon, though *eight or ten* miles distant from their houses. — Divers of the Indians also belonging to these parts, came of their own accord with my people (from *Crosweekfung*) to the meeting: two in particular, who in the last Sabbath, opposed and ridiculed Christianity.

February 22. I preached to the Indians. They seemed more free from prejudice, and more cordial to Christianity than before, and some appeared much affected.

My Spirits were supported, though my bodily strength was much wasted. O that God would be gracious to the souls of these poor Indians!

God has been very gracious to me this week: he has enabled me to preach every day; and has given me some assistance, and encouraging prospect of success in almost every sermon. Blessed be his name. Divers of the white people have been awakened this week; sundry of the Indians much cured of the prejudices and jealousies they had conceived against Christianity, and some seemed to be really awakened.

[The next day he left the forks of Delaware, to return to Croswickung; and spent the whole week 'till Saturday, before he arrived there; but preached by the way every day, excepting one; and was several times greatly assisted; and had much inward comfort, and earnest longings to fill up all his time with the service of God.]

Lord's day, March 2. Some of my people who went up to the Forks of Delaware with me, being now returned, were accompanied by two of the Indians belonging to the Forks, who had promised me a speedy visit. They can scarce go into a house now, but they will meet with Christian conversation, wherby they may be both instructed and awakened.

I know of no assembly of Christians, where there seems to be so much of the presence of God, where brotherly love so much prevails, as in my own congregation: although not more than nine months ago, they were worshipping devils and dumb idols, under the power of Pagan darkness and superstition. Amazing change! effected by nothing less than divine power and grace!

Their present situation is so compact and commodious, that they are quickly called together with only the sound of a Conk-shell, (a shell like that of a Perwinkle) so that they have frequent opportunities of attending religious exercises publicly; which  
seems

seems to be a great means, under God, of keeping alive their impressions of divine things.

Thursday, March 6. I walked alone in the Evening, and enjoyed comfort in prayer, beyond what I have of late enjoyed: my soul rejoiced in my *pilgrimage-state*. I was delighted with the thought of labouring and *enduring hardness* for God: and confided in God that he "never would leave me nor forsake me," to the end of my race. Oh, may I obtain mercy of God to be faithful, to my dying moment!

March 8. I catechised in the evening. My people answered the questions proposed to them well. I can perceive their knowledge in religion increases daily.—And what is still more desirable, the divine influence among them, appears still to continue. The divine presence seemed to be in the assembly this evening. Some, who are Christians *indeed*, were melted with a sense of the divine goodness, and their own barrenness and ingratitude.—Convictions also appeared to revive in several; so it might justly be called "an evening of power."

Lord's day, March 9. I preached from Luke x. 38—42. The word of God was attended with energy. Numbers were affected and concerned to obtain the *one thing needful*. Several that have given good evidences of being truly gracious, were much affected with a sense of their want of spirituality; and saw the need they stood in of *growing in grace*. And most that had had any impressions of divine things in times past, now felt those impressions revived.

In the afternoon, I proposed to have catechised in my usual method. But while we were engaged in the first prayer, in the Indian language, (as usual) a great part of the assembly was so much moved, that I thought it proper to omit the questions, and insist upon the most practical truths.

There appeared to be a powerful influence in the congregation. Those truly pious, were so deeply affected with a sense of their own *barrenness*, and their own unworthy treatment of the blessed Redeemer,

deemer,

deemer, that they looked on him as pierced by themselves, and mourned, yea, some of them were in bitterness as for a first-born.—Some poor awakened sinners also appeared to be in anguish of soul to obtain an interest in Christ. So that there was a great mourning in the assembly: many heavy groans and tears! and one or two persons newly come among us, were considerably awakened.

After public worship many came to my house, where we sung and discoursed; and the presence of God seemed here also to be in the midst of us.

While we were singing, there was one (the woman mentioned in my Journal of February 9,) who, I may venture to say, was “filled with joy unspeakable and full of glory,” and could not but burst forth in prayer and praises to God before us all, with many tears, crying sometimes in English, and sometimes in Indian, “O blessed Lord, do come, do come! O do take me away, do let me die and go to Jesus Christ! I am afraid if I live I shall sin again! O do let me die now! O dear Jesus, do come! I cannot stay, I cannot stay! O how can I live in this world! do take my soul away from this sinful place! O let me never sin any more!”—In this ecstasy she continued some time, uttering these and such like expressions incessantly.

When she had a little recovered, I asked her, if Christ was now sweet to her soul? Whereupon, turning to me with tears in her eyes, and with all the tokens of deep humility, she said, “I have many times heard you speak of the goodness and the sweetness of Christ, that he was better than all the world. But O! I knew nothing what you meant, I never believed you! I never believed you! But now I know it is true!”—I answered, And do you see enough in Christ for the greatest of sinners? She replied, “O! enough, enough! for all the sinners in the world, if they would but come.” And when I asked her, if she could not tell them of the goodness of Christ: turning herself about to some poor Christless souls who stood by, and were much affected, she said,

said, " O ! there is enough in Christ for you, if you would but come ! O strive, strive to give up your hearts to him !"—And upon hearing something of the glory of heaven mentioned, she again fell into the same ecstacy, repeating her former expressions, " O dear Lord, do let me go ! O what shall I do, what shall I do ! I want to go to Christ ! I cannot live ! O do let me die !"

She continued in this sweet frame for more than two hours, before she was well able to get home.

I am sensible there may be great joys, where there is no substantial evidence of their being well-grounded. But in the present case there seemed to be no evidence wanting, in order to prove this joy to be divine, either in regard of its preparatives, attendants, or consequents.

Of all the persons I have seen, I scarce ever saw one more bowed and broken under convictions of sin than this woman. Nor scarce any who seemed to have a greater acquaintance with her own heart than she had. She would frequently complain to me of the hardness and rebellion of her heart. That her heart was not willing to come to Christ for salvation, but tried every where else for help.

And as she was remarkably sensible of her stubbornness under conviction, so she appeared to be no less remarkably reconciled to Divine grace, before she obtained any relief. Since which she has constantly breathed the spirit and temper of a new creature : crying after Christ, not through fear of *hell* as before, but with strong desires after him as her only satisfying *portion* ; and has many times wept bitterly, because she could not love him.—When I have sometimes asked her, Why she appeared so sorrowful, and whether it was because she was afraid of hell ? She would answer, " No, I be not distressed about *that* ; but my heart is so wicked I *cannot love* Christ ;" and thereupon burst out into tears—But although this has been the habitual frame of her mind for several week, yet she never had any remarkable comfort, till this evening.

The *attendants* of this comfort, were such as abundantly discovered that it was truly "joy in the Holy Ghost."—Now she viewed divine truths as *living realities*; and could say, "I know these things are so, I feel they are true!"—Now her soul was resigned to the divine will in the most tender points; & that when I said to her, What if God should take away your husband from you, (who was then sick,) how do you think you could bear that? She replied, "He belongs to God, and not to me; he may do with him just what he pleases."—Now she had the most tender sense of the evil of sin, and discovered the utmost aversion to it.—Now she could freely trust her *all* with God for time and eternity. And when I queried with her, how she could be willing to die and leave her little infant: and what she thought would become of it in case she should? She answered; "God will take care of it. It belongs to him he will take care of it."—Now she appeared to have the most humbling sense of her own unworthiness and inability to preserve herself from sin, and to persevere in holiness. And I thought I had never seen such an appearance of *ecstasy* and *humility* meeting in any one person.

The consequents of this joy are no less desirable than its attendants. She since appears to be a most tender, broken-hearted, affectionate, devout, and humble Christian, as exemplary in life and conversation as any person in my congregation.

March 10. Toward night the Indians met together of their own accord, and sang, prayed, and discoursed of divine things. At this time there was much affection among them. Some appeared to be melted with divine things, and some others seemed much concerned for their souls.

I baptized the *woman* mentioned in my Journal of last Lord's day; who appeared to be in a devout, humble, and excellent frame of mind.

My house being thronged with people in the evening, I spent the time with them, till my nature was almost spent.—They are so unwearied in religious exercise

exercises, and unsatiable in their thirsting after *Christian knowledge*, that I can sometimes scarce avoid labouring so, as greatly to exhaust my strength and spirits.

March 19. Some of the persons that went with me to the Forks of Delaware, having been detained hereby the dangerous illness of one of their company, returned home this day. Whereupon my people met together of their own accord, to give thanks to God for his preserving goodness to those who had been absent from them for several weeks, and recovering mercy to him that had been sick.

Lord's day, March 23. There being about fifteen *strangers*, adult persons, come among us in the *week* past; divers of whom had never been in any religious meeting till now, I thought it proper to discourse this day in a manner peculiarly suited to their circumstances, and accordingly attempted it from Hof. xiii. 9, in the forenoon opening in the plainest manner I could, man's apostacy and ruined state, after having spoken some things respecting the being and perfections of God, and his creation of man in a state of uprightnes and happiness. In the afternoon, I endeavoured to open the glorious provision God has made for the redemption of apostate creatures.

Near sun-set I felt an uncommon concern upon my mind, especially for the poor *strangers*: I visited sundry houses, and discoursed with them severally, but without much appearance of success, till I came to a house where divers of the strangers were; and there the word took *effect*, first upon some children; then upon divers adult persons that had been somewhat awakened before, and afterwards upon several of the Pagan *strangers*.

I continued my discourse till almost every one in the house was melted into tears; and divers wept loud, and appeared earnestly concerned to obtain an interest in Christ. Upon this, numbers soon gathered from all the houses round about, and so thronged the place, that we were obliged to remove

to the house where we usually meet for public worship. And the congregation gathering immediately, and many appearing remarkably affected, I discoursed some time from Luke xix. 10, endeavouring to open the mercy, compassion, and concern of Christ for *lost, helpless, and undone* sinners.

There was much visible concern in the assembly; and I doubt not but a divine influence accompanied what was spoken to the hearts of many. There were five or six of the *strangers* (men and women) who appeared to be considerably awakened. And in particular one very rugged young man, who seemed as if nothing would move him, was now brought to tremble like the jailor, and weep for a long time.

The Pagans that were awakened seemed at once to put off their *savage* roughness, and became sociable, orderly, and *humane*. When they first came, I exhorted my people to take pains with them (as they had done with other strangers from time to time) to instruct them in Christianity. But when some of them attempted it, the strangers would soon rise up and walk to other houses. Whereupon some of the serious persons agreed to disperse themselves into the several parts of the settlement. So that wherever the *strangers* went, they met with warm addresses respecting their soul's concern.—But now there was no need of using policy in order to get an opportunity of conversing with them: for they were so touched with a sense of their perishing state, as *tame-ly* to yield to the *close* addresses, respecting their sin and misery, and their need of an acquaintance with the great Redeemer.

Monday, March 24. I numbered the Indians, to see how many souls God had gathered together here, since my coming; and found there was now about an *hundred and thirty* persons, old and young. And sundry of those that are my stated hearers, perhaps *fifteen* or *twenty*, were absent at this season. Whereas *few* were together at my first coming into these parts, the whole number not amounting to *ten* persons.

My

My people going out this day to clear some of their lands above fifteen miles distant, in order to their settling there together, where they might attend the public worship of God, have their children schooled, and at the same time have a conveniency for planting: I thought it proper to call them together, and shew them the duty of labouring with faithfulness and industry; and that they must not now "be slothful in business," as they had ever been in their Pagan state. And having given them directions for their work, and recommended them to God, I dismissed them to their business.

In the evening I read and expounded the substance of the third chapter of the Acts. Numbers seemed to melt under the word.—When I asked them afterwards, whether they did not now feel that their hearts were wicked? One replied, "Yes, she felt it now." Although before she came here, she had said, "Her heart was not wicked, and she never had done any thing that was bad in her life." And *this* indeed seems to be the case with them, universally in the Pagan state.

They seem to have no *consciousness* of sin and guilt, unless they can charge themselves with some *gross acts* of sin.

Monday, March 24. After the Indians were gone to their work, I got alone, and poured out my soul to God, that he would smile upon these feeble beginners, and that he would settle an Indian town, that might be the *mountain of holiness*; and found my soul much refreshed, and much enlarged for Zion's interest, and for numbers of dear friends in particular. My sinking spirits were revived, and I felt animated in the service God has called me to. This was the dearest hour I have enjoyed for many days, if not weeks. I found an encouraging hope, that something would be done for God, and that God would use and help me in his work. And Oh, how sweet were the thoughts of labouring for God, when I had any hope that ever I should be succeeded!

[The next day, his *school-master* was taken sick with a pleurisy; and he spent great part of the remainder of this week in tending him: which in this weak state was almost too much for him: he being obliged constantly to wait upon him, all day, from day to day, and to lie on the floor at night. His spirits sunk in a considerable degree, with his bodily strength under this burden.]

March 29. In the evening I catechised as usual—Treating upon the “benefits which believers receive from Christ’s death.”—The questions were answered with great readiness and propriety. And those who, I have reason to think, are the people of God, were sweetly melted in general. There appeared such a liveliness and vigour in their attendance upon the word of God, and such eagerness to be made partakers of the *benefits* then mentioned, that they seemed to be not only “looking for, but hastening to the coming of the day of God.” Divine truths seemed to distil upon the audience with a gentle, but melting efficacy, as the refreshing “shower upon the new mown grass.” The assembly in general, as well as those who appear truly religious, were affected with an account of the blessedness of the godly at death: and most then discovered an affectionate inclination to cry, “Let me die the death of the righteous.”

March 31. I called my people together, as I had done the Monday morning before, and discoursed to them again on the necessity of their labouring industriously, in order to their living together, and enjoying the means of grace. And having engaged in solemn prayer to God among them, I dismissed them to their work.

Numbers of them (both men and women) offered themselves willingly to this service; and some appeared affectionately concerned that God might go with them, and begin their *little town* for them: that by his blessing it might be a place comfortable for them and theirs, in regard both of procuring the necessaries of life, and of attending the worship of God

Wednesday

Wednesday, April 2. I was exercised with a spiritless frame of mind. Alas! my days pass away as the *chaff*! it is but little I do, or can do, that turns to any account; and it is my constant misery and burden, that I am so fruitless in the vineyard of the Lord. Oh that I were *spirit*, that I might be active for God. This more than any thing else, makes me long, that "this corruptible might put on incorruption, and this mortal " put on immortality." God deliver me from clogs, fetters, and a *body of death*, that impede my service for him.

Saturday, April 5.—After public worship, a number of my dear Christian Indians came to my house; with whom I felt a sweet union of soul; my heart was knit to them; and I cannot say, I have felt such a sweet and fervent *love to the brethren*, for some time past: and I saw in them appearances of the same love. This gave me something of a view of the heavenly state; and particularly that part of the happiness of heaven, which consists in the *communion of saints*.

Lord's day, April 6. I preached from Matth. vii. 21—23. There were considerable effects of the word visible in the audience: an earnest attention, a great solemnity, many tears and sighs. Divers were put upon serious and close examination of their spiritual states, by hearing that "not every one that saith to Christ, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the his kingdom." And some of them expressed fears least they had deceived themselves, and taken up a false hope, because they had done so little of the "will of his Father who is in heaven."

There was also one man brought under pressing concern for his soul; which appeared more especially after his *retirement* from public worship. And that which, he says, gave him the greatest uneasiness, was, not so much any particular sin, as that he had never done the will of God at *all*, and so had no claim to the kingdom of heaven.

in the afternoon I opened to them the *discipline* of Christ in his church, and the method in which *offenders* are to be dealt with. At which time the religious people were much affected, especially when they heard, that the offender continuing obstinate, must finally be esteemed "as an Heathen man, that has no part nor lot among God's visible people." *This* they seemed to have the most awful apprehensions of; a state of Heathenism, out of which they were so lately brought, appearing very dreadful to them.

After public worship I visited sundry houses to see how they spent the remainder of the Sabbath, and to treat with them solemnly on the great concerns of their souls; and the Lord seemed to smile upon my endeavours, and to make these particular addresses more effectual than my public discourses.

April 7. I discoursed to my people from 1 Cor. xi 23—26. and endeavoured to open to them the Institution, nature, and ends of the Lord's supper, as well as the qualifications and preparations necessary to the right participation of that ordinance.—Sundry persons appeared much affected with the love of Christ manifested in his making this provision for the comfort of his people, at a season when himself was just entering upon his sharpest sufferings.

[On Tuesday, he went to a meeting of the Presbytery appointed at Elizabeth-Town. In his way thither, he enjoyed some sweet meditations; but after he came there, he was (as he expresses it) *under an awful gloom*, that oppressed his mind. And this continued 'till Saturday-evening, when he began to have some relief. He spent the Sabbath at Staten Island; where he preached to an assembly of Dutch and English, and enjoyed considerable refreshment and comfort, both in public and private. In the evening he returned to Elizabeth-Town.]

Monday, April 14. My spirits were raised and refreshed, and my mind composed, so that I was in a comfortable frame of soul, most of the day. In the evening my head was clear, my mind serene;

enjoyed

enjoyed sweetness in secret prayer and meditation. Oh, how free, how comfortable, chearful, and yet solemn, do I feel when I am in a good measure freed from those damps and melancholy glooms, that I often labour under!

Tuesday, April 15. My soul longed for more spirituality: and it was my burden, that I could do no more for God. Oh, my barrenness is my daily affliction! Oh, how precious is time: and how it pains me, to see it slide away, while I do so very little to any good purpose! Oh that God would make me more fruitful and spiritual.

Thursday, April 17. I enjoyed some comfort in prayer, some freedom in meditation, and composure in my studies. I spent some time in writing, in the forenoon, and in the afternoon in conversation with several dear ministers. In the evening I preached from Psal. lxxiii. 28. "But it is good for me to draw near to God." God helped me to feel the truth of my text, both in the first prayer and in sermon. I was enabled to pour out my soul to God with great freedom, fervency, and affection: and to speak with tenderness, and yet with faithfulness: and divine truths seemed to fall with weight and influence upon the hearers. My heart was melted for the dear assembly, and I loved every body in it; and scarce ever felt more love to immortal souls in my life; my soul cried, "Oh that the dear creatures might be saved! O that God would have mercy on them!"

Lord's day, April 20.\* I enjoyed some freedom, and exercise of faith and prayer, in the morning; especially when I came to pray for Zion. I was free from that gloomy discouragement, that so often oppresses my mind; and my soul rejoiced in the hopes of Zion's prosperity, and the enlargement of the dear kingdom of the great Redemer.

Monday, April 21. I was composed and comfortable most of the day; free from those gloomy damps

\* This day he entered into the 29th year of his age.

that I am frequently exercised with : had freedom and comfort in prayer, several times ; especially for Zion's enlargement and prosperity. And Oh, how refreshing were these hopes to my soul ! Oh that the kingdom of the dear Lord might come.

Tuesday, April 22. My mind was remarkably free, from melancholy damps, and animated in my work. I found such fresh vigour and resolution in the service of God, that the *mountains* seemed to become a *plain* before me. Oh, blessed be God for an interval of refreshment, and fervent resolution in my Lord's work ! In the evening, my soul was refreshed in secret prayer, and my heart drawn out for divine blessings ; especially for the church of God, and his interest among my own people, and for dear friends in remote places. Oh that Zion might prosper, and precious souls be brought home to God !

April 25. Having appointed the next Lord's day for the administration of the Lord's supper, this day, was set apart for solemn *fasting* and *prayer*, to implore the blessing of God upon our design of renewing covenant with him, and with one another ; and to intreat that his divine presence might be with us in our designed approach to his table.

The solemnity was observed, not only by those who proposed to communicate, but by the whole congregation.—In the former part of the day, I endeavoured to open to my people the nature of a *fast*, and to instruct them in the duties of such a solemnity.—In the afternoon I insisted upon the special reasons there were for our now engaging in these solemn exercises ; both in regard of the need we stood in of divine assistance, in order to a due preparation for the sacred ordinance ; and in respect of the manifest *decline* of God's work here, as to the effectual conviction and conversion of sinners, there having been few of late deeply awakened out of a state of security.

The worship of God was attended with great solemnity and reverence, with much tenderness and many tears, by the truly religious : and there was  
some

some appearance of divine power upon those who had been awakened some time before.

After repeated prayer and attendance upon the word of God, I led them to a solemn renewal of their *baptismal covenant*, wherein they had explicitly and publicly given up themselves to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, avouching him to be their God; and at the same time renouncing their Heathenish vanities, their *idolatrous* and *superstitious* practices; and solemnly engaging to take the word of God for the *rule of their lives*, promising to walk together in love, to watch over themselves, and one another; to lead lives of seriousness and devotion, and to discharge the *relative* duties incumbent upon them.

This solemn transaction was attended with much seriousness; and at the same time with the utmost readiness and cheerfulness; and an union and harmony of soul, seemed to crown the whole.

April 26. In the evening I catechised those that were designed to partake of the Lord's supper the next day, upon the institution, nature, and end of that ordinance; and had abundant satisfaction respecting their knowledge. They likewise appeared, in general, to have an affecting sense of the solemnity of this sacred ordinance, and to be humbled under a sense of their own unworthiness to approach to God in it; and earnestly concerned that they may be duly prepared for an attendance upon it. Their hearts were full of love one toward another, and *that* was the frame of mind they seemed much concerned to maintain, and bring to the Lord's table with them.

I administered the *sacrament* of the Lord's supper to *twenty-three* persons of the Indians, (the number of *men* and *women* being near equal,) divers others, to the number of *five* or *six*, being now absent at the Forks of Delaware.

The ordinance was attended with great solemnity, and with a most desirable tenderness and affection. And it was remarkable, that in the performance of  
the

the *sacramental* actions, especially in the distribution of the *bread*, they seemed to be affected in a most lively manner, as if "Christ had been" really "crucified before them." And the words of the institution, when repeated and enlarged upon, seemed to be entertained with the *same full* and *firm* belief and affectionate enagement of soul, as if the Lord Jesus Christ himself had *personally* spoken to them.

Having rested some time after the administration of the *sacrament*, I walked from house to house, and conversed particularly with most of the *communicants*, and found they had been almost universally refreshed at the Lord's table "as with new wine." And never did I see such an appearance of *Christian love* among any people in all my life. It was so remarkable, that one might well have cried with an agreeable surprize, "Behold how they love one another!"

Toward night I discoursed on Tit. ii. 14, and insisted on the immediate design of Christ's death, *viz.* "That he might redeem his people from all iniquity."

This appeared to be a season of divine power. The religious people were much refreshed, and seemed remarkably tender and affectionate, full of love, joy, peace, and desires of being completely "redeemed from all iniquity;" so that some of them afterwards told me, "they had never felt the like before."—Convictions also appeared to be revived in many instances; and divers persons were awakened whom I had never observed under any religious impressions before.

Such was the influence which attended our assembly, that it seemed grievous to conclude the public worship. And the congregation when dismissed, although it was then almost dark, appeared loth to leave the place that had been rendered *so dear* to them by the benefits enjoyed, while that quickening influence distilled upon them.

April 28. I concluded the solemnity with a discourse upon John xiv. 15. "If ye love me, keep my commandments." At which time there appeared great tenderness in the audience in general, but especially

especially in the *communicants*.—O how free, how engaged and affectionate did *these* appear in the service of God! they seemed willing to have their “ears bored to the door-posts of God’s house,” and to be his servants for ever.

Observing numbers in this excellent frame, I thought it proper to improve this advantageous season, as Hezekiah did his great *passover*, (2 Chron. xxxi.) in order to promote the blessed reformation begun among them: and accordingly proposed to them, that they should *renewedly* enter into covenant before God, that they would watch over themselves and one another. And especially that they would watch against the sin of *drunkenness*, (the sin that easily besets them.)—They cheerfully complied with the proposal, and explicitly joined in that covenant: whereupon I proceeded in the most solemn manner to call God to *witness* their sacred engagement; minded them of the greatness of the guilt they would contract in the violation of it; and that God would be a terrible *witness* against those who should presume to do so, in the “great and notable day of the Lord.”

It was a season of amazing solemnity, and a *divine awe* appeared upon the face of the whole assembly! Affectionate sighs, and tears, were frequent in the audience: and I doubt not but many silent cries were sent up to the *fountain* of grace, for grace sufficient to these solemn engagements.

[On Tuesday he went to Elifabeth-Town, to attend the meeting of the Presbytery there: and seemed to spend the time, while absent from his people, in a free and comfortable state of mind.].

Saturday, May 3. I rode from Elifabeth-Town home to my people, at or near Cranberry; whither they are now removed, and where, I hope, God will settle them as a Christian congregation. I was refreshed in lifting up my heart to God, while riding; and enjoyed a thankful frame of spirit.

May 4. My people being now removed to their *lands*; I this day visited them, and preached to them from Mark iv. 5. Endeavouring to shew the reason there

there was to fear, lest many hopeful beginnings in religion, might prove abortive, like the "seed dropped upon stony places."

May 5. I visited them again, and took care of their *worldly* concerns, giving them directions relating to their business.

I daily discover more and more of what importance it is to their religious interests, that they become industrious, acquainted with the affairs of *husbandry*, and able, in a good measure, to raise the necessaries of life *within themselves*; for their present method of living greatly exposes them to temptations of various kinds.

Wednesday, May 7. I spent most of the day in writing, as usual, and enjoyed some freedom in my work. I was favoured with some comfortable meditations, this day, and in the evening, was in a sweet composed frame of mind: pleased and delighted to leave all with God, respecting myself, for time and eternity, and respecting the people of my charge and dear friends: I had no doubt but that God would take care of me, and of his own interest among my people; and was enabled to use freedom in prayer, as a child with a tender father.

Thursday, May 8. In the evening I was refreshed and enjoyed a tender melting frame in secret prayer, wherein my soul was drawn out for the interest of Zion, and comforted with the lively hope of the appearing of the kingdom of the great Redeemer. These were sweet moments: I felt almost loth to go to bed, and grieved that sleep was necessary. However, I lay down with a tender reverential fear of God, sensible that "his favour is life," and his smiles better than all that earth can boast of, infinitely better than life itself.

May 9. I preached from John v. 40. in the open wilderness; the Indians having as yet no house for public worship in this place, nor scarce any *shelter* for themselves.—Divine truths made considerable impressions upon the audience, and it was a season of solemnity, tenderness, and affection.

I baptized one man this day, (the conjuror and murderer mentioned before) who appears to be such a remarkable instance of divine grace, that I cannot omit some brief account of him.

He lived near, and sometimes attended me in the Forks of Delaware for more than a year together; but was extremely attached to strong drink, and seemed to be no ways reformed by the means I used with him. In this time he likewise *murdered* a young Indian, which threw him into a kind of *horror* and *desperation*, so that he kept at a distance from me, and refused to hear me preach for several months together, till I had an opportunity of conversing freely with him, and giving him encouragement, that his sin might be forgiven for Christ's sake.

But that which was the worst, was his *conjuraton*. He was one of them who are called *porowows* among the Indians: and notwithstanding his frequent attendance upon my preaching, he still followed his old *charms*, "giving out that he himself was some great one, and to him they gave heed," supposing him to be possessed of a *great power*. So that when I have instructed them respecting the *miracles* wrought by Christ, and mentioned them as evidences of his *divine* mission, they have quickly observed the wonders of that kind which this man had performed by his *magic charms*; whence they had a high opinion of him, which seemed to be a fatal obstruction to their receiving the gospel. And I often thought, it would be a great favour to the Indians, if God would take that wretch out of the world: but God, "whose thoughts are not as man's thoughts," has been pleased to take a much more desirable method; a method agreeable to his own merciful nature, and, I trust, advantageous to his own interest among the Indians, as well as to the poor soul himself.

The first genuine concern for his soul that ever appeared in him, was excited by seeing my interpreter and his wife baptized at the Forks of Delaware, July 21, 1745. Which so prevailed upon him that he followed me down to Crofsweekfung in the beginning

beginning of August in order to hear me preach, and there continued for several weeks, in the season of the most powerful awakening among the Indians; at which time he was more effectually awakened: and then, he says, upon his "feeling the word of God in his heart," (as he expresses it), his spirit of conjuration left him entirely; that he has had no more power of that nature since, than any other man. And he declares that he does not so much as know how he used to *charm* and conjure; and that he could not do any thing of that nature if he was ever so desirous.

He continued under convictions all the fall, and former part of the winter past, but was not so deeply exercised till January; and then the word of God took such hold upon him, that he knew not what to do, nor where to turn.—He then told me, that when he used to hear me preach from time to time in the fall of the year, my preaching pricked his heart, but did not bring him to so *great* distress, because he still hoped he could do *something* for his own relief: but now, he said, I drove him up into "such a sharp corner," that he had no way to turn.

He continued constantly under the heavy burden of a *wounded spirit*, till at length he was brought into the utmost *agony of soul*.

After this he was brought to a kind of calmness, his heavy burden was removed, and he appeared perfectly sedate; although he had no sure hope of salvation.

I observed him to appear remarkably composed, and thereupon asked him how he did? He replied, "It is done, it is done, it is all done now." I asked him what he meant? He answered, "I can never do any more to save myself; it is all done for ever, I can do no more." I queried with him, whether he could not do a *little* more rather than to go to hell. He replied, "My heart is dead, I can never help myself." I asked him, what he thought would become of him then? He answered, "I must go to hell."

hell." I asked him, if he thought it was right that God should send him to hell? He replied, "O it is right. The devil has been in me ever since I was born." I asked him, if he felt this when he was in such great distress the evening before? He answered, "No, I did not then think it was right. I thought God would send me to hell, and that I was then dropping into it; but my heart quarrelled with God, and would not say it was *right* he should send me there. But now I know it is right, for I have always served the devil, and my heart has no goodness in it now; but it is as bad as ever it was," — I thought I had scarce ever seen any person more effectually brought off from a dependence upon his own endeavours for salvation.

In this frame of mind he continued for several days, passing sentence of condemnation upon himself, and constantly owning, that it would be right he should be damned, and that he expected this would be his portion. And yet it was plain he had a secret hope of mercy, which kept him not only from despair, but from pressing distress: so that instead of being sad and dejected, his very countenance appeared pleasant and agreeable.

It was remarkable in this season that he seemed to have a great love to the people of God, and nothing affected him so much as the thoughts of being separated from them. This seemed to be a very dreadful part of the hell he thought himself doomed to. — It was likewise remarkable, that in this season he was most diligent in the use of all means for his soul's salvation; although he had the clearest view of the *insufficiency* of means to afford him help.

After he had continued in this frame of mind more than a *week*, while I was discoursing publicly, he seemed to have a lively view of the excellency of Christ, and the way of salvation by him, which melted him into tears, and filled him with admiration, comfort, and praise to God; since which he has appeared to be an humble, devout, and affectionate Christian; serious and exemplary in his con-

versation and behaviour, frequently complaining of his barrenness, his want of spiritual warmth, life, and activity, and yet frequently favoured with quickening influences. And in all respects he bears the marks of one "created anew in Christ Jesus to good works."

His zeal for the cause of God was pleasing to me, when he was with me at the Forks of Delaware in February last. There being an old Indian at the place, who threatened to *bewitch* me and my people who accompanied me; *this* man presently challenged him to do his worst, telling him, that himself had been as great a *conjurer* as he, and that notwithstanding as soon as he felt that word in his heart which these people loved, his power of conjuring immediately left him.—And so it would you, said he, if you did but once feel it in your heart; and you have no power to hurt them, nor so much as to touch one of them.

Saturday, May 10. I rode to Allen's-Town, to assist in the administration of the Lord's supper. In the afternoon I preached from Tit. ii. 14. God was pleased to carry me through with some freedom; and yet to deny me that enlargement I longed for. In the evening my soul mourned, that I had treated so excellent a subject in so defective a manner. And if my discourse had met with the utmost applause from all the world, it would not have given me any satisfaction: Oh, it grieved me to think, that I had had no more holy warmth, that I had been no more melted in discoursing of Christ's death, and the design of it! Afterwards, I enjoyed freedom and fervency in secret and family prayer, and longed much for the presence of God to attend his word and ordinances the next day.

Lord's day, May 11. I assisted in the administration of the Lord's supper; but enjoyed little enlargement. In the afternoon I went to the house of God weak and sick in soul, as well as feeble in body: and longed, that the people might be edified with divine truths, and that an honest fervent testimony might

might be borne for God; but knew not how it was possible for me to do any thing of that kind, to any good purpose. Yet God, who is rich in mercy, was pleased to give me assistance, both in prayer and preaching: God helped me to wrestle for his presence in prayer, and to tell him, that he had promised, "Where two or three are met together in his name, there he would be in the midst of them;" and pleaded, that for his truth's sake he would be with us. And blessed be God, it was sweet to my soul, thus to plead, and rely on God's promises. I discoursed upon Luke ix. 30. "And behold there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias; who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Jerusalem." I enjoyed special freedom, from the beginning to the end of my discourse. Things pertinent to the subject were abundantly presented to my view; and such a fullness of matter, that I scarce knew how to dismiss the various heads I had occasion to touch upon. And, blessed be the Lord, I was favoured with some fervency and power; as well as freedom; so that the word of God seemed to awaken the attention of a stupid audience, to a considerable degree. I was inwardly refreshed with the consolations of God; and could with my whole heart say, "Though there be no fruit in the vine, &c. yet will I rejoice in the Lord."

Friday, May 16. Near night, I enjoyed some agreeable conversation with a dear minister, which, I trust, was blessed to my soul; and my heart was warmed, and my soul engaged to live to God; so that I longed to exert myself with more vigour, than ever I had done in his cause; and those words were quickening to me, "Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bring forth much fruit." Oh, my soul longed, and wished, and prayed, to be enabled to live to God with constancy and ardour! In the evening, God was pleased to shine upon me in secret prayer, and draw out my soul after himself; and I had freedom in supplication for myself, but much

more in intercession for others : so that I was sweetly constrained to say, " Lord, use me as thou wilt ; do as thou wilt with me : but Oh, promote thine own cause ! Zion is thine ; Oh visit thine heritage ! Oh let thy kingdom come ! Oh let thy blessed interest be advanced in the world ! " When I attempted to look to God, respecting my settling in my congregation, which seems to be necessary, and yet very difficult, and contrary to my fixed intention for years past, as well as my disposition, which has been, and still is, to go forth, and spend my life in preaching the gospel from place to place, and gathering souls *afar off* to Jesus the great Redeemer ; when I attempted to look to God with regard to these things, I could only say, " The will of the Lord be done : it is no matter for me. "

The same frame of mind I felt with respect to another important affair I have lately had some serious thoughts of : I could say, with the utmost calmness and composure, " Lord, if it be most for thy glory, let me proceed in it ; but if thou seest that it will in any wise hinder my usefulness in thy cause, Oh prevent my proceeding : for all I want, is such circumstances as may best capacitate me to do service for God in the world. " Oh, how sweet was this evening to my soul ! I knew not how to go to bed ; and when got to bed, longed for some way to improve time for God, to some excellent purpose.

Saturday, May 17. I walked out in the morning, and felt much of the same frame I enjoyed the evening before : had my heart enlarged in praying for the advancement of the kingdom of Christ, and found the utmost freedom in leaving all my concerns with God.

I find *discouragement* to be an exceeding *hindrance* to my spiritual fervency and affection : but when God enables me to find that I have done something for him, this refreshes and animates me, so that I could break through all hardships, undergo any labours, and nothing seems too much either to do or suffer. But Oh, what a death it is, to strive, and strive ; to

to always in a *hurry*, and yet do *nothing*. Alas, alas, that time flies away, and I do so little for God!

Lord's day, May 18. I felt my own utter insufficiency for my work: God made me to see, that I was a child; yea, that I was a fool. I discoursed, both parts of the day, from Rev. iii. 20. "Behold, I stand at the door, and knock." God gave me freedom and power in the latter part of my (forenoon's discourse; although, in the former part of it, I felt peevish and provoked with the unmannerly behaviour of the *white* people, who crouded in between my people and me. But blessed be God, I got these shackles off before the middle of my discourse, and was favoured with a sweet frame of spirit in the latter part of the exercise: was full of love, warmth, and tendernefs, in addressing my dear people.—In the intermission-season I could not but discourse to my people on the kindness and patience of Christ in *standing and knocking at the door*.—In the evening, I was grieved, that I had done so little for God. Oh that I could be a *flame of fire* in the service of my God!

Thursday, May 22. In the evening I was in a frame somewhat remarkable: I had apprehended for several days, that it was a design of providence I should *settle* among my people; and had in my own mind begun to make provision for it: and yet was never quite pleased with the thoughts of being confined to one place. Nevertheless I seemed to have some freedom, because the congregation was one that God had enabled me to gather from among Pagans. For I never could feel any freedom to "enter into other men's labours," and settle where the "gospel was preached before;" God has never given me any liberty in that respect, either since, or for some years before I began to preach. But God having succeeded my labours, and made me instrumental of gathering a church for him among these Indians, I was ready to think, it might be his design to give me a quiet settlement. And this, considering the late frequent failure of my spirits, and the need I stood in of some

agreeable society, and my great desire of enjoying conveniencies for profitable studies, was not altogether disagreeable to me. And although I still wanted to go about far and wide, in order to spread the blessed gospel among benighted souls: yet I never had been so willing to settle for more than five years past, as I was in the foregoing part of this week; But now these thoughts seemed to be wholly dashed to pieces; not by necessity, but of choice: for it appeared to me, that God's dealings towards me had fitted me for a life of solitariness and hardship; it appeared to me I had nothing to lose, nothing to do with earth, and consequently nothing to lose, by a total renunciation of it: and it appeared just right, that I should be destitute of house and home, and many comforts, which I rejoiced to see others of God's people enjoy. The same time, I saw so much of the excellency of Christ's kingdom, and the infinite desirableness of its advancement in the world, that it swallowed up all my other thoughts; and made me willing to be a pilgrim or hermit in the wilderness, to my dying moment, if I might thereby promote the blessed interest of the great Redeemer. And if ever my soul presented itself to God for his service, without any reserve of any kind, it did so now. The language of my thoughts (although I spake no words) now was, "*Here I am, Lord, send me; send me to the ends of the earth; send me to the rough, the savage Pagans of the wilderness; send me from all that is called comfort in earth! send me even to death itself, if it be but in thy service, and to promote thy kingdom.*" And at the same time I had as quick and lively a sense of the value of worldly comforts, as ever I had; but saw them infinitely overmatched by the worth of Christ's kingdom, and the propagation of his blessed gospel. The quiet settlement, the certain place of abode, the tender friendship, which I thought I might be likely to enjoy, appeared as valuable to me, considered absolutely and in themselves, as ever before; but considered comparatively, they appeared nothing; compared with an enlargement of Christ's kingdom,

kingdom, they vanished like the stars before the rising sun. And the comfortable accommodations of life appeared valuable and dear to me, yet I did surrender myself, soul and body, to the service of God, and promotion of Christ's kingdom; though it should be in the loss of them all. I was constrained, and yet chose, to say, "Farewell, friends and earthly comforts, the dearest of them all, if the Lord calls for it; adieu, adieu; I'll spend my life, to my latest moments, *in caves and dens of the earth*, if the kingdom of Christ may thereby be advanced." I found extraordinary freedom at this time in pouring out my soul to God, for his cause; and especially that his kingdom might be extended among the Indians; and I had a strong hope, that God would do it. I continued wrestling with God in prayer for my dear little flock here; and more especially for the Indians elsewhere; as well as for dear friends in one place and another; till it was bed-time, and I feared I should hinder the family. But Oh, with what reluctancy did I find myself obliged to consume time in sleep! I longed to be as *a flame of fire*, continually glowing in the divine service; preaching and building up Christ's kingdom, to my latest, my dying moment.

Friday, May 23. In the morning I was in the same frame of mind, as in the evening before. The glory of Christ's kingdom so much outshone the pleasure of earthly accommodations and enjoyments, that they appeared comparatively nothing, though in themselves good and desirable. My soul was melted in secret meditation and prayer, and I found myself divorced from any part in this world; so that in those affairs that seemed of the greatest importance, in the present life, and those wherein the tender powers of the mind are most sensibly touched, I could only say, "The will of the Lord be done." Just the same that I felt the evening before. I felt now the same freedom in prayer for the people of my charge, for the propagation of the gospel among the Indians, and for the enlargement of Zion in general, and my dear friends in particular; and longed to  
burn

burn out in one continued flame for God. In the evening I was visited by my brother, John Brainerd: the first visit I have received from any near relative since I have been a missionary. Blessed be God. If ever I filled up a day with studies and devotion, I was enabled to fill up this day.

Lord's day, May 25. I discoursed both parts of the day from John xii. 44—48. There was some degree of divine power attending the word of God: Sundry wept and appeared considerably affected: and one who had long been under spiritual trouble, obtained clearness and comfort, and appeared to "rejoice in God her Saviour."

I have reason to hope, that God has lately brought home to himself sundry souls who had long been under spiritual trouble: tho' there have been few instances of persons lately awakend out of a state of security. And those comforted of late, seem to be brought in, in a more *silent* way, neither their concern nor consolation being so powerful and *remarkable*, as appeared among those wrought upon in the beginning.

June 6. I discoursed to my people from part of Is. liii.—The divine presence appeared to be amongst us. Divers persons were much melted and refreshed; and one man in particular, was now brought to see and feel, in a very lively manner, the impossibility of his doing any thing to help himself, or to bring him into the favour of God by his tears, prayers, and other religious performances.

Saturday, June 7. I rode to Freehold to assist Mr. Tennent in the administration of the Lord's supper. In the afternoon I preached from Psal. lxxiii 28. God gave me some freedom and warmth in my discourse: and I trust, his presence was in the assembly. I was comfortably composed, and enjoyed a thankful frame of spirit; and my soul was grieved that I could not render something to God for his benefits bestowed. O that I could be swallowed up in his praise!

Lord's day, June 8. I spent much time, in the morning, in secret duties; but between hope and fear, respecting the enjoyment of God in the business of the day. I was agreeably entertained, in the forenoon, by a discourse from Mr. Tennent, and felt melted and refreshed. In the season of communion, I enjoyed some comfort; and especially in serving one of the tables. Blessed be the Lord, it was a *time of refreshing* to me, and I trust to many others. A number of my dear people sat down by themselves at the last table; at which time God seemed to be in the midst of them.——And the thoughts of what God had done among them were refreshing and melting to me. In the afternoon, God enabled me to preach with uncommon freedom, from 2 Cor. v. 20. Through the great goodness of God, I was favoured with a constant flow of matter, and proper expressions. In the evening, I could not but rejoice in God, and bless him for the manifestations of grace in the day past. Oh it was a sweet and solemn day! a season of comfort to the godly, and of awakening to other souls.

Monday, June 9. I preached the concluding sermon from Gen. v. 24. "And Enoch walked with God." God gave me enlargement and fervency in my discourse; so that I was enabled to speak with plainness and power. Praised be the Lord, it was a sweet meeting, a desirable assembly. I found my strength renewed, and lengthened out, even to a wonder; so that I felt much stronger at the conclusion, than in the beginning. I have great reason to bless God for this solemnity, wherein I have found assistance in addressing others, and sweetness in my own soul.

To-day a considerable number of my people met together early in a *retired* place in the *woods*, and prayed, sang, and conversed of divine things; and were seen by some of the white people, to be affected and engaged; and divers of them in tears.

Afterwards they attended the concluding exercises of the sacramental solemnity, and then returned home,

home, "rejoicing for all the goodness of God" they had seen and felt: so that this appeared to be a profitable, as well as a comfortable season to many of my congregation.

Friday, June 13. — I came away from the meeting of the Indians, this day, rejoicing and blessing God for his grace manifested at this season.

The same day I baptized *five* persons, three adults and two children. One of these was the very *aged woman* of whom I gave an account in my Journal of December 26. She now gave me a very punctual, rational, and satisfactory account of the remarkable change she experienced some months after the beginning of her concern. And although she was become so childish through old age, that I could do nothing in a way of questioning with her; yet, when I let her alone to go on with her own story, she could give a very distinct relation of the many and various exercises of soul she had experienced; so deep were the impressions left upon her mind by that influence she had been under! And I have great reason to hope, she is *borne away* in her old age, she being, I presume, upwards of *four score*

Saturday, June 14. I rode to Kingston, to assist the Rev. Mr. Wales in the administration of the Lord's supper. In the afternoon I preached; but almost fainted in the pulpit: yet God strengthened me when I was just gone, and enabled me to speak his word with freedom, fervency, and application to the conscience. And praised be the Lord; "out of weakness I was made strong." I enjoyed sweetness, in and after public worship; but was extremely tired. Oh, how many are the mercies of the Lord! "To them that have no might, he increaseth strength."

Lord's day, June 15. I was in a dejected spiritless frame, that I could not hold up my head, nor look any body in the face. Yet I administered the Lord's supper at Mr. Wales's desire: and found myself in a good measure relieved of my pressing load, when I came to ask a blessing on the elements; here  
God

God gave me enlargement, and a tender affectionate sense of spiritual things: so that it was a season of comfort, to me, and I trust, more so to others. In the afternoon I preached to a vast multitude from Rev. xxii. 17. God helped me to offer a testimony for himself, and to leave sinners inexcusable in neglecting his grace. I was enabled, to speak with such freedom, fluency, and clearness, as commanded the attention of the great. I was extremely tired, in the evening, but enjoyed composure and sweetness.

Monday, June 16. I preached again; and God helped me amazingly, so that this was a refreshing season to my soul and others. For ever blessed be God for help afforded at this time, when my body was so weak, and there was so large an assembly to hear.

June 19, I visited my people with two of the Reverend correspondents: I spent some time in conversation with them upon spiritual things; and took care of their worldly concerns.

This day makes up a complete year from the first time of my preaching to these Indians in New-Jersey.—What amazing things has God wrought in this time for these poor people! What a surprising change appears in their tempers and behaviour! How are savage Pagans transformed into affectionate, and humble Christians! and their drunken and Pagan howlings, turned into fervent prayers and praises to God! They “who were sometimes darkness, are now become light in the Lord.” May they walk as children of the light, and of the day. And now to him that is of power to stablish them according to the gospel, and the preaching of Christ—To God only wise, be glory, through Jesus Christ, for ever and ever! Amen.”

Before I conclude, I would make a few *general remarks* upon what to me appears worthy of notice.

And, *first*, I cannot but take notice that I have ever since my first coming among these Indians, been favoured with that assistance, which (to me) is *uncommon*, in preaching *Christ crucified*, and making him  
the

the *centre* and *mark* to which all my discourses were directed.

It was the principal scope of all my discourses for several months, (after having taught the people something of the being and perfections of God, his creation of man in a state of rectitude and happiness, and the obligations mankind were thence under to love and honour him,) to lead them into an acquaintance with their deplorable state by nature: their inability to deliver themselves from it: the utter insufficiency of any external reformation, or of any religious performances, to bring them into the favour of God. And thence to shew them their absolute need of Christ to save them from the misery of the fallen state.—To open his all-sufficiency and willingness to save the chief of sinners.—The *freeness* and *riches* of his grace, proposed “without money, and without price.”—And thereupon to press them *without delay* to betake themselves to him, under a sense of their misery and undone estate, for relief and everlasting salvation.—And to shew them the abundant encouragement the gospel proposes to, perishing, helpless sinners, so to do.

And I have often remarked, that whatever subject I have been upon, after having spent time sufficient to explain the truths contained therein I have been *naturally* and *easily* led to Christ as the *substance* of every one. If I treated on the being and glorious perfections of God, I was thence *naturally* led to discourse of Christ as the only “way to the Father.”—If I attempted to open the misery of our fallen state, it was natural from thence to shew the necessity of Christ to undertake for us, to atone for our sins, and to redeem us from the power of them.—If I taught the commands of God, and shewed our violation of them, this brought me in the most easy way, to speak of, the Lord Jesus Christ, as one who had “magnified the law” we had broken and who was “become the end of it” for righteousness, to every one that believes.” And never did I find so much freedom and assistance in making all the various lines of my discourses meet together, and cen-

ret in Christ, as I have frequently done among these Indians.

I have frequently been enabled to represent the divine glory, the infinite preciousness and transcendent loveliness of the great Redeemer; the suitability of his person and purchase to supply the wants, and answer the utmost desires of immortal souls.—To open the infinite riches of his grace, and the wonderful encouragement proposed in the gospel to unworthy, helpless sinners.—To call, invite, and beseech them to come and give up themselves to him, and be reconciled to God through him.—To expostulate with them respecting their neglect of one so infinitely lovely, and freely offered.—And *this in such a manner*, with such freedom, pertinency, pathos, and application to the conscience, as I never could have made myself master of by the most assiduous application. And have often at such seasons been surprisngly helped in adapting my discourses to the *capacities* of my people, and bringing them down into such easy, vulgar, and familiar methods of expression, as has rendered them intelligible even to Pagans.

*Secondly*, It is worthy of remark, that numbers of these people are brought to a strict compliance with the rules of *morality* and *sobriety*, and to a conscientious performance of the *external duties* of Christianity; without their having them frequently inculcated upon them, and the contrary vices particularly exposed.

God was pleased to give the grand gospel truths such a powerful influence upon their minds, that their lives were quickly reformed, without my spending time in repeated harangues upon *external duties*. There was indeed no room for any discourses but those that respected the *essentials* of religion, and the *experimental* knowledge of divine things, while there were so many inquiring daily, not how they should regulate their *external* conduct; but how they should escape from the wrath to come—obtain an *effectual change of heart*,—get an interest in Christ,—and come to the enjoyment of eternal blessedness.—So that my *great work* still was to lead them into a further view of their

total depravity ; to shew that there was no manner of goodness in them : no good dispositions nor desires ; no love to God, nor delight in his commands ; but, on the contrary, hatred, enmity, and all manner of wickedness :—And at the same time to open to them the glorious remedy provided in Christ for helpless perishing sinners, and offered freely to those who have no goodness of their own, no “ works of righteousness,” to recommend them to God.

When these truths were felt *at heart*, there was no vice unreformed,—no external duty neglected.—Drunkenness, the darling vice, was broken off, and scarce an instance of it known for months together. The practice of *husbands* and *wives* in putting away each other, and taking others in their stead, was quickly reformed. The same might be said of all other vicious practices.—The reformation was general ; and all springing from the *internal* influence of divine truths upon their hearts ; not because they had heard these vices particularly exposed, and repeatedly spoken against.

So that happy experience, as well as the word of God, and the example of Christ and his apostles, have taught me, that the preaching, which is best suited to awaken in mankind a lively apprehension of their depravity and misery,—to excite them earnestly to seek after a change of heart, and to *fly for refuge* to Christ, as the only *hope set before them*, is like to be most *successful* toward the reformation of their external conduct.—I have found that close addresses and solemn applications of divine truth to the conscience, strike death to the root of all vice ; while smooth and plausible harangues upon *moral virtues* and *external duties*, at best do no more than lop off the *branches* of corruption.

I do not intend, by what I have observed, to represent the preaching of *morality*, and pressing persons to the *external* performance of duty, to be unnecessary and useless *at any time* ; and especially at times when there is less of divine power attending the means of grace.—It is doubtless among the things that “ ought

to be done," while "others are not to be left undone."—But what I principally design is to discover a plain matter of fact, viz. That the external compliance with the rules of Christianity, appearing among my people, are not the effect of any *merely* rational view of the beauty of *morality*, but of the internal influence that divine truths have had upon their hearts.

*Thirdly*, It is remarkable, that God has so continued and renewed the showers of his grace: So quickly set up his kingdom among these people; and so finished upon them in relation to their acquirement of knowledge, both divine and human. It is now near a year since the beginning of this gracious outpouring of the divine Spirit among them: and although it has often seemed to decline for some short time, yet the shower was renewed, and the work of grace revived again: so that a divine influence seems still to attend the means of grace, in a greater or less degree; whereby religious persons are refreshed, strengthened, and established,—convictions revived and promoted in many instances,—and some newly awakened from time to time. Although it must be acknowledged, that for some time past, there has appeared a more manifest decline of this work. Yet (blessed be God) there is still an appearance of divine power, a desirable degree of tenderness and devotion in our assemblies.

And as God has continued the showers of his grace among this people; so he has with uncommon *quickness* set up his visible kingdom in the midst of them. I have now baptized, since the conclusion of my last Journal, thirty persons, fifteen adults, and fifteen children. Which added to the number there mentioned, makes seventy-seven persons; whereof thirty-eight are adults, and thirty-nine children: and all within the space of eleven months past.—And have baptized no adults, but such as appeared to have a work of grace in their hearts: I mean such as have had the experience not only of the awakening, but of the renewing and comforting influences of the divine Spirit.

Much of the Goodness of God has appeared in relation to their acquirement of knowledge, both in religion and in common life. There has been a wonderful thirst after *Christian knowledge* among them, and an eager desire of being instructed. This has promoted them to ask many pertinent as well as important questions. Many of the doctrines I have delivered, they have queried with me about, in order to gain further light into them: and have from time to time manifested a good understanding of them, by their answers to the questions proposed.

They have likewise taken pains, and appeared remarkably apt in learning to sing Psalms, and are now able to sing with a good degree of decency in the worship of God.

They have also acquired a considerable degree of useful knowledge in the affairs of common life: so that they now appear like *rational* creatures, fit for human society, free from that savage roughness and brutish stupidity, which rendered them very disagreeable in their Pagan state.

And as they are desirous of instruction, and surprisingly apt in the reception of it, so divine providence has smiled upon them in regard of *proper means* in order to it. — The attempts made for a *school* among them have succeeded, and a kind providence has sent them a *school-master*, of whom I may justly say, I know of “no man like-minded, who will naturally care for their state.”

He has generally thirty or thirty-five children in his school: and when he kept an evening school (as he did while the length of the evenings would admit of it) he had fifteen or twenty people, married and single.

The children learn with surprising readiness; so that their *master* tells me, he never had an English school that learned, in general, near so fast. There were not above two in thirty, although some of them were very small, but what learned to know all the *letters* in the *alphabet* distinctly, within three days after his entrance upon his business; and divers in that  
space

space learned to *spell* considerably; and some of them, since the beginning of February last (at which time the school was set up) have learned so much, that they are able to read in a *Psalter* or *Testament* without spelling.

They are instructed in the duty of secret prayer, and most of them constantly attend it night and morning, and are very careful to inform their master if they apprehend any of their little school-mates neglect that religious exercise.

*Fourthly*, It is worthy to be noted, that amidst *so great* a work of conviction,—so much concern and religious affection, there has been no *prevalency*, nor indeed any considerable *appearance* of *false religion*, (if I may so term it) or heats of imagination, intemperate zeal, and spiritual pride: which corrupt mixtures too oftend attend the revival of religion; and that there have been so very few instances of scandalous behaviour among those who have appeared serious. The religious concern that persons have been under, has generally been *rational* and *just*; arising from a *sense* of their sins, and the divine displeasure on the account of them; as well as their utter inability to deliver themselves from the misery they felt and feared.—And it is remarkable, although the concern of many persons has been very great and pressing, yet I have never seen any thing like *despair* attending it in any one instance: whence it is apparent, there is not that danger of persons being driven into despair under *spiritual trouble*, (unless in cases of melancholy,) that the world in general is ready to imagine.

The *comfort* persons have obtained after their distresses, has likewise in general appeared solid, well grounded, and scriptural; arising from a spiritual and *supernatural illumination* of mind,—a view of divine things *as they are*,—a complacency of soul in the divine perfections,—and a peculiar satisfaction in the *way of salvation* by free *grace* in the great Redeemer.

Their joys have seemed to rise from a variety of

views and considerations of divine things, although for substance the same.

Some have at first appeared to rejoice especially in the *wisdom* of God, discovered in the way of salvation by Christ; it then appearing to them "a new and living way," a way they had never thought, nor had any just conception of, until opened to them by the *special* influence of the divine spirit. And some of them, upon a lively *spiritual* view of this way of salvation, have wondered at their past folly in seeking salvation other ways, and have admired that they never saw *this* way of salvation before, which now appeared so *plain* and *easy*.

Others have had a more *general* view of the beauty and excellency of Christ, and have had their souls delighted with an apprehension of his glory, as unspeakably exceeding *all* they had ever conceived before; yet without singling out (as it were) any one of the divine perfections in particular; so that although their comforts have seemed to arise from a *variety* of views of divine glories, still they were *spiritual* and *supernatural* views of them.

What the Indians notions of God are, in their Pagan state, is hard, precisely to determine. I have taken much pains to inquire of my Christian people, whether they, before their acquaintance with Christianity, imagined whether there was a *plurality* of great invisible powers, or whether they supposed but *one* such being, and worshipped him in a variety of shapes: but cannot learn any thing of them so distinct as to be fully satisfying upon the point. Their notions in that State were so prodigiously dark and confused, that they seemed not to know what they thought themselves. But so far as I can learn, they had a notion of a plurality of invisible *deities*, and paid some kind of homage to them promiscuously, under a great variety of shapes. And it is certain, those who yet remain Pagans pay some kind of superstitious reverence to beasts, birds, fishes, and even reptiles; that is, some to one kind of animal, and some to another. They do not indeed suppose a  
divine

divine power *essential* to these creatures, but that some invisible beings (I cannot learn that it is always one such being only, but divers) communicate to these animals a *great power*, either one or other of them, (just as it happens) and so make these creatures the immediate authors of good to certain persons. Whence such a creature becomes *sacred* to the persons to whom he is supposed to be the immediate author of good, and through him they must worship the invisible powers, though to others he is no more than another creature. And perhaps another animal is looked upon to be the immediate author of good to *another*, and consequently *he* must worship the invisible powers in that animal. And I have known a Pagan burn fine tobacco for incense, in order to appease the anger of that invisible power which he supposed presided over *rattle-snakes*, because one of these animals was killed by another Indian near his house.

But I find, that in antient times, before the coming of the white people, some supposed there was *four* invisible powers, who presided over the four corners of the earth. Others imagined the *sun* to be the *only* deity, and that all things were made by him: others at the same time having a confused notion of a certain *body* or fountain of *deity*, somewhat like the *anima mundi*, so frequently mentioned by the more learned antient Heathens, diffusing itself to various animals, and even to inanimate things, making them the immediate authors of good to certain persons. But after the coming of the white people, they seemed to suppose there were three deities, and three only, because they saw people of three different kinds of complexion, *viz.* English, Negroes, and themselves.

It is a notion pretty generally prevailing among them, that it was not the *same God* made them, who made us; but that they were made after the white people; which further shews, that they imagine a plurality of divine powers. And I fancy they suppose their God gained some special skill by seeing the  
white

white people made, and so made *them* better: for it is certain they look upon themselves, and their methods of living, (which, they say, their God expressly prescribed), as vastly preferable to the white people, and their methods. And hence they will frequently sit and laugh at them, as being good for nothing but to fatigue themselves with hard labour; while *they* enjoy the satisfaction of stretching themselves on the ground, and sleeping as much as they please; and have no other trouble than now and then to chase the deer. Hence, by the way, many of them look upon it as disgraceful for them to become Christians, as it would be esteemed among Christians to become a Pagan: and though they suppose our religion will do well enough for us, because prescribed by *our* God, yet it is no ways proper for them, because not of the same make and original.

They seem to have some confused notion of a future state, and many of them imagine that the *chichang*, (*i. e.* the shadow), or what survives the body, will at death go *southward*, and in an unknown but curious place, will enjoy some kind of happiness, such as hunting, feasting, dancing. And what they suppose will contribute much to their happiness in that state is, that they shall never be weary of those entertainments. It seems by this notion of their going *southward* to obtain happiness, as if they had their course into these parts from some very cold climate, and found the further they went *southward* the more comfortable they were; and thence concluded, that perfect felicity was to be found further towards the same point.

They seem to have some faint notion of *rewards* and *punishments*, or at least *happiness* and *misery* in a future state, that is, some that I have conversed with, tho' others seem to know no such thing. Those that suppose this, imagine that most will be happy, and those that are not so, will be punished only with *privation*, being excluded the walls of that good world where happy souls shall dwell.

These

These rewards and punishments they suppose to depend entirely upon their conduct with relation to the duties of the *second* table, *i. e.* their behaviour towards mankind, and not have any reference to any thing that relates to God. I once consulted a very ancient, but intelligent Indian upon this point, whether the Indians of old times had supposed there was any thing of the man that would survive the body? He replied, Yes. I asked him, where they supposed its abode would be? He replied, "It would go southward." I asked him further, whether it would be happy there? He answered, after some considerable pause, "that the souls of *good* folks would be happy, and the souls of *bad* folks miserable." I then asked him, who he called *bad* folks? His answer was, "Those who lie, steal, quarrel with their neighbours, are unkind to their friends, and especially to aged parents, and, in a word, are a plague to mankind." These were his *bad* folks; but not a word was said of their neglect of divine worship, and their badness in that respect.

They have indeed some kind of worship, are frequently offering *sacrifices* to some supposed invisible powers, and are very ready to impute their calamities in the *present* world, to the neglect of these sacrifices; but there is no appearance of reverence and devotion in the homage they pay them; and what they do of this nature, seems to be done only to appease the anger of their deities, to engage them to do them no hurt, or at most, only to invite these *powers* to succeed them in those enterprises they are engaged in. So that in offering these sacrifices, they seem to have no reference to a future state. And they seem to imagine, that those they call *bad* folks, are excluded from the company of good people in that state, not so much as because God is determined to punish them for their sins of any kind, as because they would render others unhappy if admitted to dwell with them. So that they are excluded rather of necessity, than by God acting as a *righteous* judge.

They

They give much heed to *dreams*, because they suppose these invisible powers give them directions therein. They are likewise much attached to the traditions of their fathers, who have informed them of divers miracles anciently wrought, which they firmly believe. They also mention some wonderful things which, they say, have happened since the memory of some who are now living. One affirmed to me, that himself had once been dead four days, that most of his friends were gathered together to his funeral, and that he should have been buried, but that some of his relations who were sent for were not arrived, before whose coming he came to life again. In this time, he says, he went to the place where the sun rises; (imagining the earth to be plain,) and directly over that place, at a great height in the air, he was admitted, he says, into a great house, which he supposes was several miles in length, and saw many wonderful things.

What increases their aversion to Christianity is the influence their *powwows* have upon them. These are supposed to have a power of *foretelling future events*, of *recovering the sick*, and of *charming persons to death*. And their spirit, in its various operations, seems to be a Satanical imitation of the spirit of prophecy that the church in early ages was favoured with.

I have laboured to gain some acquaintance with this affair, and have for that end consulted the man mentioned in my Journal of May 9, who, since his conversion to Christianity, has endeavoured to give me the best intelligence he could of this matter. But it seems to be such a *mystery of iniquity*, that I cannot well understand it; and, so far as I can learn, he himself has not any clear notions of the thing, now his spirit of divination is gone from him. However the manner in which he says he obtained this spirit was, he was admitted into the presence of a great man, who informed him, that he loved, pitied, and desired to do him good. It was not in this world that he saw the great man, but in a world above at a vast distance

distance from this. The great man, he says, was clothed with the day; yea, with the brightest day he ever saw; a day of many years, yea, of everlasting continuance! this whole world, he says, was drawn upon him, so that in him, the earth, and all things in it, might be seen. I asked him, if rocks, mountains, and seas was drawn upon, or appeared in him? He replied, that every thing that was beautiful and lovely in the earth was upon him, and might be seen by looking on him, as well as if one was on the earth to take a view of them there. By the side of the great man, he says, stood his shadow or spirit. This shadow, he says, was as lovely as the man himself, and filled all places, and was most agreeable as well as wonderful to him.—Here he says, he tarried some time, and was unspeakably entertained and delighted with a view of the great man, of his shadow or spirit, and of all things in him. And what is most of all astonishing, he imagines all this to have passed before he was born. He never had been, he says, in this world at that time. And what confirms him in the belief of this, is, that the great man told him, that he must come down to earth, be born of *such* a woman, meet with *such* and *such* things, and in particular, that he should once in his life be guilty of *murder*. At this he was displeased, and told the great man, he would never murder. But the great man replied, “I have said it, and it shall be so.” Which has accordingly happened. At this time, he says, the great man asked him what he would chuse in life. He replied, first to be a *hunter*, and afterwards to be a *powwow* or *diviner*. Whereupon the great man told him, he should have what he desired, and that his *shadow* should go along with him down to earth, and be with him for ever. There was, he says, all this time no words spoken between them. The conference was not carried on by any *human* language, but they had a kind of mental intelligence of each others thoughts. After this, he says, he saw the great man no more; but supposes he came down to earth to be born, but the spirit or shadow of  
the

the great man still attended him, and ever after continued to appear to him in dreams and other ways until he felt the power of God's word upon his heart since which it has entirely left him.

This spirit, he says, used sometimes to direct him in dreams to go to such a place and hunt, assuring him he should there meet with success, which accordingly proved so. And when he had been there some time, the spirit would order him to another place. So that he had success in hunting, according to the great man's promise made to him at the time of his choosing this employment.

There were sometimes when this spirit came upon him in a *special* manner, and he was full of what he saw in the great man; and then, he says, he was *light*, and not only *light* himself, but it was *light around him*, so that he could see through men, and knew the thoughts of their hearts. These *depths Satan* I leave to others to fathom, and do not know what ideas to affix to such terms, nor can guess what conceptions of things these creatures have at the time when they call themselves *all light*. But my interpreter tells me, that he heard one of them tell a certain Indian the secret thoughts of his heart, which he had never divulged. The case was this, the Indian was bitten with a snake, and was in extreme pain. When upon the *diviner* (who was applied to for his recovery) told him, that at *such a time* he had promised, that the next deer he killed he would sacrifice it to for *great power*, but had broken his promise. And now he said he, that great power has ordered this snake bite you for your neglect. The Indian confessed it was so, but said he had never told any body of it. But as *Satan*, no doubt, excited the Indian to make that promise, it was no wonder he should be able to communicate the matter to the conjurer.

[On Friday and Saturday, he was very much afflicted but yet preached to his people on Saturday. His sickness continued on the Sabbath; but he preached notwithstanding both parts of the day; and after public worship, endeavoured to apply divine truths

to the consciences of some, and addressed them personally for that end: several were in tears, and some appeared much affected. But he was extremely wearied with the service, and was so ill at night, that he could have no bodily rest; but remarks, that "God was his support, and that he was not left destitute of comfort in him." On Monday, he continued very ill; but speaks of his mind's being calm and composed, resigned to the divine dispensations, and content with his feeble state.]

Lord's day, June 29. I preached both parts of the day, from John xiv. 19. "Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more," &c. God was pleased to afford me both freedom and power; and his power appeared in the assembly, in both exercises. Numbers of God's people were refreshed and melted with divine things; one or two comforted, who had been long under distress; convictions, in divers instances, powerfully revived; and one man in years much awakened, who had not long frequented our meeting, and appeared before as stupid as a stock. God amazingly renewed my strength. I was so spent at noon, that I could scarce walk, and all my joints trembled; so that I could not sit, nor so much as hold my hand still: and yet God strengthened me to preach with power in the afternoon. I spent some time afterwards in conversing particularly, with several persons. I prayed afterwards with a sick child, and gave a word of exhortation, and returned home with more health than I went out; although my linen was wringing wet upon me, from a little after ten in the morning, till past five in the afternoon. My spirits also were considerably refreshed; and my soul rejoiced in hope, that I had through grace done something for God. In the evening I walked out, and enjoyed a sweet season in secret prayer and praise. But Oh, I found the truth of the Psalmist's words, "My goodness extendeth not to thee!" I could not make any returns to God; I longed to live only to him, and to be in tune for his praise and service for ever. Oh, for  
 S spirituality

spirituality and holy fervency, that I might *spend and be spent* for God to my latest moment!

Tuesday, July 1. In the afternoon I visited and preached to my people, from Heb. ix. 27. on occasion of some persons lying at the point of death, in my congregation. God gave me assistance; and his word made an impression upon the audience in general.

[On Wednesday he went to Newark, to a meeting of the Presbytery. The remaining part of the week he spent there, and at Elizabeth-Town.]

Monday, July 7. My spirits were considerably refreshed. There is no comfort, I find, in any enjoyment, without enjoying God, and being engaged in his service. In the evening I had the most agreeable conversation that ever I remember in all my life, upon God's being *all in all*, and all enjoyments being just *that* to us which God makes them, and no more. It is good to begin and end with God.

Saturday, July 12. This day was spent in fasting and prayer by my congregation, as preparatory to the sacrament. I discoursed, both parts of the day, from Rom. iv. 25. "Who was delivered for our offences," &c. God gave me assistance in my discourses, and divine power attended the word; so that this was an agreeable season. Afterwards I led them to a solemn renewal of their covenant, and fresh dedication of themselves to God. This was a season both of solemnity and sweetness, and God seemed to be "in the midst of us."

Lord's day, July 13. In the forenoon I discoursed on the *bread of life*, from John vi. 35. God gave me assistance; and there appeared some tender affection in the assembly. I administered the sacrament of the Lord's supper to thirty-one persons of the Indians. God seemed to be present in this ordinance; the communicants were sweetly refreshed. Oh, how they melted, even when the elements were first uncovered! There was scarcely a dry eye among them, when I took off the linen, and shewed them the symbols of *Christ's broken body*.—Having rested a  
little

little, after the administration of the sacrament, I visited the communicants, and found them generally in a sweet loving frame. In the afternoon I discoursed upon *coming to Christ*, and the *satisfaction* of those who do so. This was likewise an agreeable season, a season of much tenderness, and I returned home much spent, yet rejoicing in the goodness of God.

Monday, July 14. I discoursed from Psal. cxix. 106. "I have sworn, and I will perform it," &c. There appeared to be a powerful influence on the assembly, and considerable melting under the word. Afterwards, I led them to a renewal of their covenant before God, (that they would watch over themselves and one another, lest they should fall into sin and dishonour the name of Christ,) just as I did on Monday, April 28. This transaction was attended with great solemnity: and God owned it by exciting in them a fear and jealousy of themselves, lest they should sin against God.

[The next day, he set out on a journey towards Philadelphia; from whence he did not return till Saturday. He went this journey, and spent the week under great illness of body and dejection of mind.]

Monday, July 21. I preached to the Indians, chiefly for the sake of some strangers: I then proposed my design of taking a journey to Susquahanna; and exhorted my people to pray for me, that God would be with me in that journey, and chose divers persons of the congregation to travel with me.

Monday, July 28. I was very weak, and scarce able to perform any business, but I enjoyed sweetness and comfort in prayer; and was composed and comfortable through the day: my mind was intense, and my heart fervent in secret duties; and I longed to *spend and be spent for God*.

Tuesday, July 29. My mind was cheerful, and free from those melancholy damps, that I am often exercised with. In the evening I enjoyed a comfortable season in secret prayer, was helped to plead with God for my own dear people: and for the di-

vine presence to attend me in my intended journey to Susquahannah.

Wednesday, July 30. I was uncommonly easy, both in body and mind: my mind was solemn, I was assisted in my work, and God seemed to be near me: so that the day was as comfortable as most I have enjoyed for some time.

Friday, August 1. In the evening I enjoyed a sweet season in secret prayer; clouds and perplexing cares were sweetly scattered, and nothing anxious remained. Oh, how serene was my mind at this season!—how free from that distracting concern I have often felt! “Thy will be done,” was a petition sweet to my soul; and if God had bidden me chuse for myself in any affair, I should have chosen rather to have referred the choice to him; for I saw he was infinitely wise, and could not do any thing amiss, as I was in danger of doing.

Saturday, August 2. I preached from Matth. xi. 19, and the presence of God seemed to be remarkably in the assembly. Blessed be God for such a revival among us. In the evening I was very weary, but found my spirits supported and refreshed.

Friday, August 5. I preached at the funeral of one of my Christians, from Isa. lvii. 2, was oppressed with the nervous head-ach, and considerably dejected: however, I had a little freedom. I was extremely weary in the evening; but notwithstanding enjoyed some liberty in prayer, and found the dejection that I feared, much removed, and my spirits considerably refreshed.

Thursday, August 7. I rode to my house, where I spent the last winter, in order to bring some things I needed for my Susquahannah journey: I was refreshed to see that place, which God so marvellously visited with the showers of his grace. How amazingly did the *power of God* appear there! “Bless the Lord, O my soul.”

Saturday, August 9. In the afternoon, I visited my people, set their affairs in order, and contrived for them the management of their worldly business: discoursed

discourfed to them in a folemn manner, and concluded with prayer. I was compofed in the evening, and fervent in fecret prayer: had a view of the eternal world, and much ferenity of mind. Oh that I could magnify the Lord for any freedom he affords me in prayer!

Monday, Auguft 11. Being about to fet out for Sufquahannah the next day, I fpent fome time this day in prayer with my people, that God would blefs and fucceed my journey; and fet up his kingdom among the poor Indians in the wildernefs. While I was opening and applying part of the cxth Pfalm, the *power of God* defcended on the afsembly; and while I was making the firft prayer, numbers were melted, and I found affectionate enlargement of foul. God helped me, and my interpreter alfo: there was a fhaking and melting among us; and divers, I doubt not, were in fome meafure “filled with the Holy Ghoft;” efppecially while I infifted upon the promife of *all nations bleffing* the great Redeemer: my foul was refreshed to think, that this glorious feafon fhould furely come; and numbers of my dear people were alfo refreshed. Afterwards I prayed; and had fome freedom, but was almoft fpent: then I walked out, and left my people to carry on religious exercifes among themfelves: they prayed repeatedly, and fung, while I refted and refreshed myfelf. Afterwards I went to the meeting, prayed with, and difmiffed the afsembly. Blessed be God, this has been a day of grace.

[The next day, he fet out on his journey towards Sufquahannah, and fix of his Chriftian Indians with him, whom he had chofen out of his congregation, as thofe that he judged moft fit to affift him. He took his way through Philadelphia, intending to go to Sufquahannah-river, far down, where it is fettled by the white people, below the country inhabited by the Indians; and fo to travel up the river to the Indian habitations: for although this was much farther about, yet hereby he avoided the huge mountains and hideous wildernefs, which in time paft he

had found to be extremely fatiguing. He rode this week as far as Charlestown, a place of that name about thirty miles westward of Philadelphia; where he arrived on Friday; and in his way hither, was for the most part in a composed comfortable state of mind.]

Saturday, August 16. [At Charlestown.] It being a day kept by the people of the place where I now was, as preparatory to the celebration of the Lord's supper, I tarried, heard Mr. Treat preach: and then preached myself. God gave me some freedom, and helped me to discourse with warmth, and application, to the conscience. Afterwards I was refreshed in spirit, though much tired; and spent the evening agreeably in prayer, and Christian conversation.

Monday, August 18. I rode on my way towards Paxton, upon Susquahannah-river, but felt my spirits sink, towards night.

Tuesday, August 19. I rode forward still; and at night lodged by the side of Susquahannah.

Wednesday, August 20. Having lain in a cold sweat all night, I coughed much bloody matter this morning; but what gave me encouragement, was, I had a secret hope that I might speedily get a dismissal from earth, and all its sorrows. I rode this day to one Chambers's, upon Susquahannah, and there lodged, but was much afflicted, in the evening, with an ungodly crew, drinking and swearing. Oh, what a *hell* would it be, to be numbered with the *ungodly*!

Thursday, August 21. I rode up the river about fifteen miles, and there lodged, in a family that appeared quite destitute of God. I laboured to discourse with the man about the life of religion, but found him very artful in evading it. Oh, what a death it is to some, to hear of *the things of God*!

Friday, August 22. I continued my course up the river: my people now being with me, who before were parted from me; travelled above all the English settlements; at night, lodged in the open woods,  
and

and slept with more comfort; than while among an ungodly company of white people.

Lord's day, August 24. Towards noon I visited some of the Delawares, and discoursed with them about Christianity. In the afternoon I discoursed to the *King*, and others, upon divine things, who seemed disposed to hear. I spent most of the day in these exercises. In the evening I enjoyed some comfort and satisfaction: especially in secret prayer: this duty was made so agreeable to me, that I loved to walk abroad and repeatedly engage in it.

Monday, August 25. I sent out my people to talk with the Indians, and contract a familiarity with them. Some good seemed to be done by their visit this day, and divers appeared willing to hearken to Christianity.

Tuesday, August 26. About noon I discoursed to a considerable number of Indians: I was enabled to speak with much plainness, warmth, and power. The discourse had impression upon some, and made them appear very serious.

Wednesday, August 27. There having been a thick smock, in the house where I lodged, I was this morning distressed with pains in my head and neck. In the morning the smock was still the same: and a cold easterly storm gathering, I could neither live within doors nor without any long time together; I was pierced with the rawness of the air abroad, in the house distressed with the smock. I this day lived in great distress, and had not health enough to do any thing to purpose.

Thursday, August 28. I was under great concern of mind. I was visited by some who desired to hear me preach: and discoursed to them in the afternoon, with some fervency, and laboured to persuade them to *turn to God*. I scarce ever saw more clearly, that it is God's *work* to convert souls, I knew I could not touch them, I saw I could only speak to *dry bones*, but could give them no sense of what I said. My eyes were up to God for help: I could say, the *work* was *his*.

Friday,

Friday, August 29. I travelled to the Delawares found few at home : felt poorly, but was able to spend some time alone in reading God's word and in prayer.

Lord's day, August 31. I spake the word of God to some few of the Susquahannah Indians. In the afternoon, I felt very weak and feeble. Oh, how heavy is my work, when *faith* cannot take hold of an *almighty arm*, for the performance of it.

Monday, September 1. I set out on a journey towards a place called *The great island*, about fifty miles distant from Shaumoking, in the north-western branch of Susquahannah. At night I lodged in the woods. I was exceeding feeble, this day, and sweat much the night following.

Tuesday, September 2. I rode forward; but no faster than my people went on foot. I was so feeble and faint, that I feared it would kill me to lie out in the open air; and some of our company being parted from us, so that we had now no axe with us, I had no way but to climb into a young pine-tree, and with my knife to lop the branches, and so made a shelter from the dew. I sweat much in the night, so that my linen was almost wringing wet all night. I scarce ever was more weak and weary than this evening.

Wednesday, September 3. I rode to Delaware town; and found divers drinking and drunken. I discoursed with some of the Indians about Christianity; observed my *interpreter* much engaged in his work; some few persons seemed to hear with great earnestness. About noon I rode to a small town of Shauwaunoes, about eight miles distant; spent an hour or two there, and returned to the Delaware town. Oh, what a dead, barren, unprofitable wretch did I now see myself to be! My spirits were so low, and my bodily strength so wasted, that I could do nothing at all. At length, being much overdone I lay down on a *buffalo skin*; but sweat much the whole night.

Thursday, September 4. I discoursed with the Indians about Christianity; my *interpreter*, afterwards, carrying

carrying on the discourse, to a considerable length: some few appeared well-disposed, and somewhat affected. I left this place, and returned towards Shaumoking; and at night lodged in the place where I lodged the Monday night before: but my people being belated, did not come to me till past ten at night; so that I had no fire to dress any victuals, or to keep me warm; and I was scarce ever more weak and worn out in my life.

Friday, September 5. I was so weak, that I could scarcely ride; it seemed sometimes as if I must fall off from my horse: however, I got to Shaumoking, towards night, and felt thankfulness, that God had so far returned me.

Saturday, September 6. I spent the day in a very weak state; coughing and spitting blood, and having little appetite to any food I had with me: I was able to do very little, except discourse awhile of divine things to my own people, and to some few I met with.

Monday, September 8. I spent the forenoon among the Indians; in the afternoon, left Shaumoking, and returned down the river a few miles. I had proposed to have tarried a considerable time longer among the Indians upon Susquahannah; but was hindered by the weakly circumstances of my own people, and especially my own extraordinary weakness, having been exercised with great nocturnal sweats, and a coughing up of blood, in almost the whole of the journey. I was a great part of the time so feeble and faint, that it seemed as though I never should be able to reach home; and at the same time destitute of the comforts, yea, necessaries of life; at least, what was necessary for one in so weak a state. In this journey I sometimes was enabled to speak the word of God with power, and divine truths made some impressions on divers that heard me; so that several, both men and women, old and young, seemed to cleave to us, and be well disposed towards Christianity; but others mocked and shouted, which damped those who before seemed friendly; yet God, at times,

times, was evidently present, assisting me, my interpreter, and other dear friends who were with me. God gave sometimes a good degree of freedom in prayer for the ingathering of souls there; and I could not but entertain a strong hope, that the journey should not be wholly fruitless.

Tuesday, September 9. I rode down the river near thirty miles, was extreme weak, much fatigued and wet with a thunder storm. I discoursed with some warmth and closeness to some poor ignorant souls, on the life and power of religion. They seemed much astonished, when they saw my Indians ask a blessing, and give thanks at dinner; concluding that a very high evidence of grace in them; but were more astonished, when I insisted, that neither that, nor yet secret prayer, was any sure evidence of grace. Oh the ignorance of the world! How are some empty outward forms, mistaken for true religion.

Wednesday, September 10. I rode near twenty miles homeward; and was much solicited to preach, but was utterly unable. I was extremely overdone with the heat and showers, and coughed up considerable quantities of blood.

Thursday, September 11. I rode homeward; but was very weak, and sometimes scarce able to ride, I had a very importunate invitation to preach at a meeting-house I came by, but could not, by reason of weakness. I was resigned under my weakness; but was much exercised for my companions in travel, whom I had left with much regret, some lame, and some sick.

Friday, September 12. I rode about fifty miles; and came just at night to a Christian friend's house, about twenty-five miles westward from Philadelphia. I was kindly entertained, and found myself much refreshed in the midst of my weakness and fatigues.

Lord's day, September 14. I preached both parts of the day (but short) from Luke xiv, 23. God gave me freedom and warmth in my discourse; and helped me to labour in singleness of heart. I was much tired in the evening, but was comforted with the most tender

der treatment I ever met with in my life. My mind, through the whole of this day, was exceeding calm; and I could ask for nothing but that "the will of God might be done."

Wednesday, September 17. I rode into Philadelphia, but was very weak, and my cough and spitting of blood continued.

Saturday, September 20. I arrived among my own people: found them praying together: went in, and gave them some account of God's dealings with me and my companions in the journey. I then prayed with them, and the divine presence was among us; divers were melted into tears. Being very weak, I was obliged soon to repair to my lodgings. Thus God has carried me through the fatigues and perils of another journey to Susquahannah, and returned me again in safety, though under a great degree of bodily indisposition. Many hardships and distresses I endured in this journey: but the Lord supported me under them all.

## P A R T VIII.

*After his Return from his last Journey to Susquahannah, until his Death.*

[HITHERTO Mr. Brainerd had kept a constant diary, giving an account of what passed from day to day: but henceforward his diary is much interrupted by his illness; under which he was often brought so low, as not to be able to recollect, in the evening, what had passed in the day, and set down an orderly account of it in writing. However, he took some notice of the most material things concerning himself even 'till within a few days of his death.]

Lord's day, September 21, 1746. I was so weak I could not preach, nor ride over to my people in the afternoon. In the afternoon I rode out; sat in

my

my chair, and discoursed to my people from Rom. xiv. 7, 8. I was strengthened in my discourse and there appeared something agreeable in the assembly. I returned to my lodgings extremely tired but thankful, that I had been enabled to speak a word to my poor people. I was able to sleep little through weariness and pain. Oh, how blessed should I be, if the little I do were all done with right views!

Saturday, September 27. I spent this as the week past, under a great degree of bodily weakness, exercised with a violent cough, and a considerable fever had no appetite to any kind of food; and frequently brought up what I eat, as soon as it was down: I was able, however, to ride over to my people, about two miles, every day, and take some care of those who were then at work upon a small house for me to reside in amongst the Indians\*. I was sometimes scarce able to walk, and never able to sit up the whole day. Yet I was calm and composed, and but little exercised with melancholy, as in former seasons. It was many times a comfort to me, that *life* and *death* did not depend upon my choice. I was pleased to think, that he who is infinitely wise, had the determination of this matter; and that I had no trouble, to consider and weigh things upon all sides, in order to make the choice, whether I would live or die. I could with great composure look *death* in the face, and frequently with sensible joy. Oh, how blessed it is, to be *habitually prepared* for death! The Lord grant, that I may be *actually ready also!*

Lord's day, September 28. I rode to my people; and, though under much weakness, discoursed about half an hour; at which season divine power seemed to attend the word; but being extremely weak, I was obliged to desist; and after a turn of faintness, with much difficulty rode to my lodgings, where betaking myself to my bed, I lay in a burning fever, and almost delirious,

\* This was the fourth house he built for his residence among the Indians.

delirious, for several hours, till towards morning, my fever went off with a violent sweat. I have often been feverish after preaching: but this was the most distressing turn, that ever preaching brought upon me. Yet I felt perfectly at rest in my own mind, because I had made my utmost attempts to speak for God.

Tuesday, September 30. Yesterday and to-day I was scarce able to sit up half the day. But I in a composed frame was remarkably free from dejection and melancholy; as God has been pleased to deliver me from these unhappy glooms, in the general course of my present weakness hitherto, and also from a peevish spirit. Oh that I may always be able to say, "Lord, not my will, but thine be done!"

Saturday, October 4. I spent the former part of this Week under a great degree of disorder, as I had done several weeks before: was able, however, to ride a little every day, although unable to sit up half the day, and took some care daily of persons at work upon my house. On Friday afternoon I found myself wonderfully revived and strengthened; and having some time before given notice to my people, and those at the Forks of Delaware in particular, that I designed, to administer the sacrament of the Lord's supper upon the first Sabbath in October. On Friday afternoon I preached preparatory to the sacrament from 2 Cor. xiii. 5. I was surprisingly strengthened in my work, while I was speaking: but was obliged immediately after to repair to bed, being now removed into my own house among the Indians; which gave me such speedy relief, as I could not well have lived without. I spent some time on Friday night in conversing with my people as I lay upon my bed; and found my soul refreshed. This being Saturday, I discoursed particularly with divers of the communicants; and this afternoon preached from Zech. xii. 10. There seemed to be a tender melting, and hearty mourning for sin in the congregation. My soul was in a comfortable frame, and I was myself, as well as most of the congregation, much affected with the

humble confession, and apparent broken-heartedness of a *backslider*; and could not but rejoice, that God had given him such a sense of his sin and unworthiness. I was extremely tired in the evening; but lay on my bed, and discoursed to my people.

Lord's day, October 5. I was still very weak; and in the morning afraid I should not be able to go through the work of the day. I discoursed before the administration of the sacrament from John i. 29. "Behold the Lamb of God, that taketh away the sin of the world."—The divine presence attended this discourse; and the assembly was considerably melted. After sermon I baptized two persons, and then administered the Lord's supper to near forty communicants of the Indians, besides divers dear Christians of the white people. It was a season of divine power and grace; and numbers rejoiced in God. Oh, the sweet union and harmony then appearing among the religious people! My soul was refreshed, and my friends, of the white people, with me. After the sacrament I could scarcely get home; but was supported by my friends, and laid on my bed; where I lay in pain till the evening; and then was able to sit up and discourse with my friends. Oh, how was this day spent in prayers and praises among my dear people! One might hear them all the morning before public worship, and in the evening till near midnight, praying and singing praises to God, in one or other of their houses.

Saturday, October 11. Towards night I was seized with an ague, which was followed with a hard fever, and much pain: I was treated with great kindness, and was ashamed to see so much concern about so unworthy a creature. I was in a comfortable frame of mind, wholly submissive, with regard to life or death. It was indeed a peculiar satisfaction to me, to think, that it was not my business to determine whether I should live or die. I likewise felt peculiarly satisfied, while under this uncommon degree of disorder; being now fully convinced of my being really unable to perform my work. Oh, how precious

scious is time! And how guilty it makes me feel, when I think I have trifled away and misemploy'd it, or neglected to fill up each part of it with duty, to the utmost of my ability!

October 19. I was willing either to die or live; but found it hard to think of living usefess. Oh that I might never live to be a burden to God's creation; but that I might be allowed to repair home, when my sojourning work is done!

Friday, October 24. I spent the day in overseeing and directing my people about mending their fence, and securing their wheat.—I was somewhat refreshed in the evening, having been able to do something valuable in the day-time. Oh, how it pains me, to see time pass away, when I can do nothing to any purpose!

Saturday, October 25. I visited some of my people; spent some time in writing, and felt much better in body, than usual: when it was near night, I felt so well, that I had thoughts of expounding: but in the evening was much disordered again, and spent the night in coughing, and spitting of blood.

Lord's day, October 26. In the morning I was exceeding weak, and spent the day till near night, in pain to see my poor people wandering *as sheep not having a shepherd*. But towards night, finding myself a little better, I called them together to my house, and sat down, and read and expounded Matth. v. 1—16. This discourse, though delivered in much weakness, was attended with power; especially what was spoken upon the last of these verses, where I insisted on the infinite wrong done to religion, by having our *light* become *darkness*, instead of *shining before men*. As many were deeply affected with a sense of their deficiency, in regard of a spiritual conversation, and a spirit of concern and watchfulness seemed to be excited in them; so there was one that had fallen into drunkenness, some time before, who was now deeply convinced of his sin, and discovered a great degree of grief and concern on that account. My soul was refreshed to see this. And though I had no strength to

ſpeak ſo much as I would have done, but was obliged to lie down on the bed : yet I rejoiced to ſee ſuch an humble melting in the congregation ; and that divine truths, though faintly delivered, were attended with ſo much efficacy.

Monday, October 27. I ſpent the day in directing the Indians, about mending the fence round their wheat : and was able to walk with them, and contrive their buſineſs, all the forenoon. In the afternoon I was viſited by two dear friends, and ſpent ſome time in converſation with them. Towards night I was able to walk out, and take care of the Indians again.

October 28. I rode to Prince-Town, in a very weak ſtate : had ſuch a violent fever, by the way, that I was forced to alight at a friend's houſe, and lie down for ſome time. Near night I was viſited by Mr. Treat, Mr. Beaty, and his wife, and another friend : my ſpirits were reſreſhed to ſee them : but I was ſurprized, and even aſhamed, that they had taken ſo much pains as to ride thirty or forty miles to ſee me.

Saturday, November 1. I took leave of my friends and returned home.

Lord's day, November 2. I was unable to preach and ſcarcely able to ſit up the whole day. I was almoſt funk, to ſee my poor people deſtitute of the means of grace ; and eſpecially conſidering they could not read, and ſo were under great diſadvantages for ſpending the Sabbath comfortably. Oh, methought, I could be contented to be ſick, if my poor flock had a faithful paſtor to feed them. A view of their want of this was more afflictive to me, than all my bodily illneſs.

Monday, November 3. Being now in ſo low a ſtate, that I was utterly incapable of performing my work, and having little hope of recovery, unleſs by much riding, I thought it my duty to take a journey into New-England, I accordingly took leave of my congregation this day.—Before I left my people, I viſited them all in their reſpective houſes, and diſcourſed to each one, as I thought moſt ſuitable for their circumſtances, and found great freedom in ſo doing :

doing: I scarce left one house but some were in tears, not only affected with my being about to leave them, but with the solemn addressess I made; for I was helped to be fervent in spirit. When I had thus gone through my congregation, (which took me most of the day) and had taken leave of them, and of the school, I rode about two miles, to the house where I lived in the summer past, and there lodged.

Tuesday, November 4. I rode to Woodbridge, and lodged with Mr. Pierfon.

Wednesday, November 5. I rode to Elifabeth-Town, intending as soon as possible to prosecute my journey. But I was in an hour or two taken much worse.—For near a week I was confined to my chamber, and most of the time to my bed; and then so far revived as to be able to walk about the house; but was still confined within doors.

I was enabled to maintain a calm, composed, and patient spirit, as I had from the beginning of my weakness. After I had been in Elifabeth-Town about a fortnight, and had so far recovered that I was able to walk about the house, upon a day of thanksgiving kept in this place, I was enabled to recount the mercies of God, in such a manner as greatly affected me, and filled me with thankfulness to God; especially for his work of grace among the Indians, and the enlargement of his kingdom. “Lord, glorify thyself,” was the cry of my soul. Oh that all people might love and praise the blessed God.

After this comfortable season, I frequently enjoyed enlargement of soul in prayer for my dear congregation, very often for every family, and every person in particular; and it was a great comfort to me, that I could pray heartily to God for those whom I was not allowed to see.

In the latter end of December, I grew still weaker, and continued to do so, till the latter end of January 1746-7. And having a violent cough, a considerable fever, and no appetite for any manner of food, I was reduced to so low a state, that my friends generally despaired of my life; and for some time to-

gether, thought I could scarce live a day to an end.

On Lord's day, February 1. "If ye, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?" This text I was helped to plead, and saw the divine faithfulness engaged for dealing with me better than any earthly parent can do with his child. This season so refreshed my soul, that my body seemed also to be a gainer by it. And from this time, I began gradually to amend. And as I recovered some strength, vigour, and spirit, I found at times some life in the exercises of devotion, and longings after spirituality and a life of usefulness.

On Tuesday, February 24. I was able to ride as far as Newark, (having been confined within Elisabeth-Town almost four months,) and the next day returned to Elisabeth-Town. My spirits were somewhat refreshed with the ride, though my body was weary.

On Saturday, February 28. I was visited by an Indian of my own congregation, who brought me letters, and good news of the behaviour of my people in general; this refreshed my soul, I could not but retire and bless God for his goodness.

Wednesday, March 11, being kept in Elisabeth-Town as a day of fasting and prayer, I was able to attend public worship, which was the first time since December 21. Oh, how much distress did God carry me through in this space of time! But having obtained help from him, I yet live: Oh that I could live to his glory!

Thursday, March 18. I rode to my people: and on Friday morning walked about among them, and inquired into their state and concerns; and found an additional weight on my spirits upon hearing some things disagreeable. I endeavoured to go to God with my distresses: but notwithstanding my mind continued very gloomy. About ten o'clock, I called my people together, and after having explained and sung a psalm, I prayed with them. There was a considerable

rable deal of affection among them; I doubt not, that which was more than merely natural.

[This was the *last interview* that he ever had with his people. About eleven o'clock the same day, he left them; and the next day came to Elisabeth-Town.]

Saturday, March 28. I was taken this morning with a violent griping. These pains were extreme and constant, for several hours; so that it seemed impossible for me, without a miracle, to live twenty-four hours. I lay confined to my bed, the whole day: but it pleased God to bless means for the abatement of my distress. I was exceedingly weakened by this pain, and continued so for several days following. In this distressed case, *death* appeared agreeable to me; as an entrance into a place "where the weary are at rest;" and, I had some relish of the entertainments of the heavenly state; so that by these I was allured and drawn, as well as driven by the fatigues of life. Oh, how happy it is, to be drawn by desires of a state of perfect holiness!

Saturday, April 4. I was uneasy, by reason of the misemployment of time: and yet knew not what to do: I longed to spend time in fasting and prayer; but, alas, I had not bodily strength! Oh, how blessed a thing is it, to enjoy peace of conscience! how dreadful is a want of inward peace! It is impossible, I find, to enjoy this happiness without *redeeming time*, and maintaining a spiritual frame of mind.

Lord's day, April 5. It grieved me, to find myself so inconceivably barren. My soul thirsted for grace; but, alas, how far was I from obtaining what I saw so excellent! I was ready to despair of ever being holy; and yet my soul was desirous of *following hard after God*; but never did I see myself so far from *having apprehended, or being already perfect*. The Lord's supper being this day administered, in the season of communion, I enjoyed warmth of affection, and felt a tender *love to the brethren*; and, to the glorious Redeemer, the *first-born* among them. I endeavoured then to *bring forth mine and his enemies, and slay them*  
before

before him; and found great freedom in begging deliverance from this spiritual death, as well as in asking favours for my friends, and congregation, and the church of Christ in general.

Friday, April 17. In the evening, God helped me to "draw near to the throne of grace," and gave me a sense of his favour, which gave me inexpressible support and encouragement; I could not but rejoice, that ever God should discover his reconciled face to such a vile sinner. Shame and confusion, at times, covered me; and then hope, and joy, and admiration of divine goodness.

Tuesday, April 21. I set out on my journey for New-England; I travelled to New-York, and there lodged.

[This proved his final departure from New-Jersey. — He travelled slowly, and arrived among his friends at East-Haddam, about the beginning of May.]

Lord's day, May 10. (At Had-Lime) I could not but feel gratitude to God, that he had always disposed me, in my ministry, to insist on the great doctrines of *regeneration, a new creature, faith in Christ, progressive sanctification, supreme love to God, living entirely to the glory of God, being not our own*, and the like. God has helped me to see, from time to time, that these, and the like doctrines, necessarily connected with them, are the *only foundation* of safety and salvation for perishing sinners; and that those divine dispositions, which are consonant hereto, are that *holiness*, "without which no man shall see the Lord:" the exercise of these God-like tempers, wherein the soul acts in a kind of concert with God, and would be and do every thing that is pleasing to God; this, I saw, would stand by the soul in a dying hour; for God must, *deny himself*, if he cast away *his own image*, even the soul that is one in desires with himself.

Lord's day, May 17. Though I felt much dullness this week; yet I had some glimpses of the excellency of divine things; and especially one morning, the beauty of holiness, as a likeness to the glorious God, was so discovered to me,  
that

that I longed earnestly to be in that world where holiness dwells in perfection, that I might please God, live entirely to him, and glorify him to the utmost stretch of my capacities.

Lord's day, May 24. (At Long-Meadow in Springfield) I could not but think, as I have often remarked to others, that much more of *true religion* consists in *deep humility, brokenness of heart, and an abasing sense of want of holiness*, than most who are called *Christians*, imagine.

[On Thursday, May 28. He came from Long-Meadow to Northampton; appearing vastly better than he had been in the winter; indeed so well, that he was able to ride twenty-five miles in a day, and to walk half a mile; but yet he was undoubtedly, at that time, in a confirmed, incurable consumption.

I had much opportunity before this, of particular information concerning him, but now I had opportunity for a more full acquaintance with him. I found him remarkable sociable, pleasant, and entertaining in his conversation; yet solid, savoury, spiritual, and very profitable; appearing meek, modest, and humble, far from any stiffness, moroseness, superstitious demureness, or affected singularity in speech or behaviour. We enjoyed not only the benefit of his conversation, but had the comfort of hearing him pray in the family, from time to time. His manner of praying was becoming a worm of the dust, and a disciple of Christ addressing to an infinitely great and holy God, and Father of mercies; not with florid expressions, or a studied eloquence; not with any intemperate vehemence, or indecent boldness; at the greatest distance from any appearance of ostentation, and from every thing that might look as though he meant to recommend himself to those that were about him, or set himself off to their acceptance, free from vain repetitions, without impertinent excursions, or needless multiplying of words. He expressed himself with the strictest propriety, with weight and pungency; and yet what his lips uttered seemed to flow from the *fulness of his heart*, as deeply impressed with

a great and solemn sense of our necessities, unworthiness, and dependence, and of God's infinite greatness, excellency, and sufficiency, rather than merely from a warm and fruitful brain. And I know not, that ever I heard him so much as ask a blessing or return thanks at table, but there was something remarkable to be observed both in the matter and manner of the performance. In his prayers he insisted much on the prosperity of Zion, the advancement of Christ's kingdom in the world, and the flourishing and propagation of religion among the Indians. And he generally made it one petition in his prayer, "that we might not outlive our usefulness."]

[This week he consulted Dr. Mather, at my house, concerning his illness; who plainly told him there were great evidences of his being in a confirmed *consumption*, and that he could give him no encouragement, that he should ever recover. But it seemed not to occasion the least discomposure in him, nor to make any alteration as to the freedom or pleasantness of his conversation.]

Lord's day, June 7. My soul was so drawn forth, this day, by what I heard of the "exceeding preciousness of the grace of God's Spirit," that it almost overcame my body: I saw that true grace is exceeding precious indeed; that it is very rare; and that there is but a very small degree of it, even where the reality of it is to be found.

In the preceding week, I enjoyed some comfortable seasons of meditation. One morning the cause of God appeared exceeding precious to me: I saw also, that God has an infinitely greater concern for it, than I could possibly have; that if I have any true love to this blessed interest, it is only a drop derived from that ocean; hence, I was ready to "lift up my head with joy;" and conclude, "Well, if God's cause be so dear and precious to him, he will promote it."

[He was advised by physicians still to continue riding, as what would tend to prolong his life. He was at a loss for some time which way to bend his

course;

course; but finally determined to ride to Boston; we having concluded that one of this family should go with him and be helpful to him in his low state.]

Tuesday, June 9. I set out on a journey from Northampton to Boston.

Having now continued to ride for some considerable time, I felt myself much better, and I found, that in proportion to the prospect I had of being restored to a state of usefulness, so I desired the continuance of life: but death appeared, inconceivably more desirable to me, than a useless life; yet blessed be God, I found my heart fully resigned to this greatest of afflictions, if God saw fit thus to deal with me.

Friday, July 12. I arrived in Boston this day, somewhat fatigued with my journey. There is no *rest*, but in God: fatigues of body, and anxieties of mind, attend us, both in town and country.

On Thursday, June 18. I was taken exceeding ill, and brought to the gates of death, by the breaking of small ulcers in my lungs, as my physician supposed. In this extreme weak state I continued several weeks, and was frequently so low, as to be utterly speechless; and even after I had so far revived, as to step out of doors, I was exercised every day with a faint turn, which continued usually four or five hours; at which times, though I could say *Yes* or *No*, yet I could not speak one sentence, without making stops for breath; and divers times in this season, my friends gathered round my bed, to see me breathe my last.

How I was, the first day or two of my illness, with regard to the exercise of reason, I scarcely know; but the third day, and constantly afterwards, for four or five weeks together, I enjoyed much serenity of mind, and clearness of thought, as perhaps I ever did in my life; and I think, my mind never penetrated with so much ease and freedom into divine things, and I never felt so capable of demonstrating the truth of many important doctrines of the gospel as now.

As God was pleased to afford me clearness of thought almost continually, for several weeks together; so he enabled me, in some measure, to employ my time to valuable purposes. I was enabled to write a number of important *letters*, to friends in remote places: and sometimes I wrote when I was speechless, *i. e.* unable to maintain conversation with any body.—Besides this, I had many *visitants*; with whom, when I was able to speak, I always conversed of the things of religion; and was peculiarly assisted in distinguishing between *true* and *false* religion. And especially, I discoursed repeatedly on the nature and necessity of that *humiliation, self-emptiness*, or full conviction of a person's being utterly undone in himself, which is necessary in order to a saving *faith*, and the extreme *difficulty* of being brought to this, and the great danger there is of persons taking up with some *self-righteous appearances* of it. The *danger* of this I especially dwelt upon, being persuaded that multitudes perish in this hidden way; and because so little is said from most pulpits to discover any danger here: so that persons being never effectually brought to die to themselves, are never truly united to Christ. I also discoursed much on what I take to be the essence of true religion, that God-like temper and disposition of soul, and that holy conversation and behaviour, that may justly claim the honour of having God for its original and patron. And I have reason to hope God blessed my discoursing to some, both ministers and people; so that my time was not wholly lost.

[Also the honourable Commissioners in Boston, of the incorporated society in London for propagating the gospel in New-England, and parts adjacent, having a legacy of the late Dr. Daniel Williams of London, for the support of *two missionaries* to the Heathen, were pleased, while he was in Boston, to consult him about a mission to those Indians called the *Six Nations*; and were so satisfied with his sentiments on this head, and had that confidence in his faithfulness, and judgment, that they desired him to recom-

recommend a couple of persons fit to be employed in this business.

Mr. Brainerd's restoration from his extremely low state in Boston, so as to go abroad again and to travel, was very unexpected to him and his friends. My daughter who was with him, writes thus concerning him, in a letter dated June 23.—“On Thursday, he was very ill of a violent fever, and extreme pain in his head and breast, and, at turns, delirious. So he remained till Saturday evening, when he seemed to be in the agonies of death: the family was up with him 'till one or two o'clock, expecting every hour would be his last. On Sabbath-day he was a little revived, his head was better, but very full of pain, and exceeding sore at his breast, much put to it for breath. Yesterday he was better upon all accounts. Last night he slept but little. This morning he is much worse.—Dr. Pyncheon says, he has no hopes of his life; nor does he think it likely he will ever come out of his chamber.”

His physician, the honourable Joseph Pyncheon, Esq. when he visited him in Boston, attributed his sinking so suddenly into a state so nigh unto death, to the breaking of ulcers, that had been long gathering in his lungs, and there discharging and diffusing their purulent matter; which, while nature was labouring and struggling to throw off, (that could be done no otherwise, than by a gradual straining of it through the small vessels of those vital parts), this occasioned an high fever, and violent coughing, and threw the whole frame of nature into the utmost disorder; but supposed, if the strength of nature held 'till the lungs had this way gradually cleared themselves of this putrid matter, he might revive, and continue better, 'till new ulcers gathered and broke; but then he would surely sink again; and that there was no hope of his recovery; but (as he expressed himself to one of my neighbours) he was as certainly a dead man, as if he was shot through the heart.

But so it was ordered in divine providence, that the strength of nature held out through this great conflict, so as just to escape the grave at that turn; and then he revived, to the astonishment of all that knew his case.

After he began to revive, he was visited by his youngest brother, Mr. Israel Brainerd, a student at Yale-college; who having heard of his extreme illness, went from thence to Boston, in order to see him.

This visit was attended with a mixture of joy and sorrow to Mr. Brainerd. He greatly rejoiced to see his brother, especially because he had desired an opportunity of some religious conversation with him before he died. But this meeting was attended with sorrow, as his brother brought to him the tidings of his sister Spencer's death at Haddam; a sister, between whom and him had long subsisted a peculiar dear affection, and much intimacy in spiritual matters. He had heard nothing of her sickness 'till this report of her death. But he had these comforts together with the tidings, a confidence of her being gone to heaven, and an expectation of his soon meeting her there.—His brother continued with him 'till he left the town, and came with him from thence to Northampton.

Concerning the last Sabbath Mr. Brainerd spent at Boston, he writes in his *diary* as follows.]

Lord's day, July 19. I was just able to attend public worship, being carried to the house of God in a chaise. I heard Dr. Sewall preach in the forenoon: partook of the Lord's supper at this time. In the sacrament, I saw astonishing *wisdom* displayed; such wisdom as required the tongues of angels and glorified saints to celebrate; it seemed to me I never should do any thing at adoring the infinite *wisdom* of God discovered in the contrivance of man's redemption, until I arrived at a world of perfection; yet I could not help striving to "call upon my soul, and all within me, to bless the name of God."

[The

[The next day he set out in the cool of the afternoon, on his journey to Northampton, attended by his brother, and my daughter that went with him to Boston; and would have been accompanied out of the town by a number of gentlemen, had not his aversion to any thing of pomp and shew prevented it.]

Saturday, July 25. I arrived here at Northampton, having set out from Boston on Monday, about four o'clock P. M. In this journey, I rode about sixteen miles a day, one day with another. I was sometimes extremely tired, so that it seemed impossible for me to proceed any further: at other times I was considerably better, and felt some freedom both of body and mind.

Lord's day, July 26. This day, I saw clearly, that God himself could not make me happy unless I could be in a capacity to "please and glorify him for ever;" take away *this*, and admit me into all the fine *heavens* that can be conceived by men or angels, and I should still be *miserable* for ever.

[Though he had so far revived, as to be able to travel thus far, yet he manifested no expectation of recovery: he supposed, as his physician did, that his being brought so near to death at Boston, was owing to the breaking of ulcers in his lungs: he told me that he had had several such ill turns before, only not to so high a degree, but as he supposed, owing to the same cause; and that he was brought lower and lower every time; and it appeared to him, that in his last sickness (in Boston) he was brought as low as possible, and yet alive; and that he had not the least expectation of surviving the next return of this breaking of ulcers: but still appeared perfectly calm.

On Wednesday morning, the week after he came to Northampton, he took leave of his brother Israel, never expecting to see him again in this world.

When Mr. Brainerd came hither, he had so much strength as to be able, from day to day, to ride out two or three miles, and to return; and sometimes to

pray in the family; but from this time he sensibly decayed, and became weaker and weaker.

While he was here, his conversation from first to last was much on the same subjects as it had been in Boston: he was much in speaking of the nature of *true religion* of heart and practice, as distinguished from its various *counterfeits*; expressing his great concern, that the latter did so much prevail in many places. He often manifested his great abhorrence of all such *doctrines* and *principles* in religion, as in any wise favoured of, and had any (though but a remote) tendency to Antinomianism; of all such notions as seemed to diminish the necessity of holiness of life, or to abate men's regard to the commands of God, and a strict, diligent, and universal practice of virtue, under a pretence of depreciating our works, and magnifying God's free grace. He spake often, with much detestation, of such *discoveries* and *joys* as have nothing of the nature of *sanctification* in them, and do not tend to strictness, tenderness, and diligence in religion, and meekness and benevolence toward mankind: and he also declared, that he looked on such pretended *humility*, as worthy of no regard, that was not manifested by *modesty of conduct* and *conversacion*.

After he came hither, as long as he lived, he was much in speaking of the future prosperity of Zion that is so often promised in scripture: and his mind seemed to be carried forth with intense desires, that religion might speedily revive and flourish; yea, the nearer death advanced, still the more did his mind seem to be taken up with this subject. He told me, when near his end, that "he never in all his life had his mind so led forth in desires and earnest prayers for the flourishing of *Christ's kingdom* on earth, as since he was brought so exceeding low at Boston." He seemed much to wonder, that there appeared no more of a disposition in ministers and people to pray for the flourishing of religion through the world; that so little a part of their prayers was generally taken up about it, in their families, and elsewhere;

and

and particularly, he several times expressed his wonder, that there appeared no more forwardness to comply with the *propofal* lately made, in a memorial from a number of ministers in Scotland, and sent over into America, for *united extraordinary prayer*, among Christ's ministers and people, for the *coming of Christ's kingdom* : and he sent as his dying advice to his *own congregation*, that they should practise agreeably to that *propofal*.\*

Though he was exceeding weak, yet there appeared in him a continual care well to employ time, and fill it up with something that might be profitable ; either profitable conversation, or writing letters to absent friends, or noting something in his diary, or looking over his former writings, correcting them, and preparing them to be left in the hands of others at his death, or giving some directions concerning a future management of his people, or employment in secret devotions. He seemed never to be easy, however ill, if he was not doing something for God, or in his service.

In his diary for Lord's day, August 16, he speaks of his having so much refreshment of soul in the house of God, that it seemed also to refresh his body. And this is not only noted in his diary, but was very observable to others ; it was very apparent, not only, that his mind was exhilarated with inward consolation, but also that his animal spirits and bodily strength were remarkably restored.—But this was the last time that ever he attended public worship on the Sabbath.

U 3.

On

\* *His congregation, since this, have with great chearfulness and unanimity fallen in with this advice, and have practised agreeably to the propofal from Scotland ; and have at times appeared with uncommon engagedness and fervency of spirit in their united devotions, pursuant to that propofal. Also the presbyteries of New-York, and New-Brunswick, since this, have with one consent, fallen in with the propofal, as likewise some others of God's people in those parts,*

On Tuesday morning that week (I being absent on a journey) he prayed with my family; but not without much difficulty; and this was the last family prayer that ever he made.

He had been wont, till now, frequently to ride out, two or three miles; but this week, on Thursday, was the last time he ever did so.]

Lord's day, August 23. This morning I was considerably refreshed with the thought, yea, the expectation of the *enlargement of Christ's kingdom*; and I could not but hope, the time was at hand, when Babylon the great would fall, and rise no more. I was unable to attend public worship: but God was pleased to afford me satisfaction in divine thoughts. Nothing so refreshes my soul, as when I can go to God, yea, to God my exceeding joy.

In this week past, I had divers turns of inward refreshing, though my body was inexpressibly weak. Sometimes my soul centered in God, as my only portion; and I felt that I should be for ever unhappy, if he did not reign; I saw the sweetness and happiness of being his subject, at his disposal. This made all my difficulties quickly vanish.

[Till this week he had been wont to lodge in a room above stairs; but he now grew so weak, that he was no longer able to go up stairs and down. Friday, August 28, was the last time he ever went above stairs, henceforward he betook himself to a lower room.

On Wednesday, September 2. Being the day of our public lecture, he seemed to be refreshed with seeing the neighbouring ministers, and expressed a great desire once more to go to the house of God: and accordingly rode to the meeting, and attended divine service, while the Reverend Mr. Woodbridge of Hatfield preached. He signified that he supposed it to be the last time that ever he should attend the public worship, as it proved. And indeed it was the last time that ever he went out at our gate alive.

On the Saturday evening next following, he was unexpectedly visited by his brother Mr. John Brainerd.

nerd. He was much refreshed by this unexpected visit, this brother being peculiarly dear to him; and he seemed to rejoice in a devout manner, to see him, and to hear the comfortable tidings he brought concerning the state of his dear Indians: and a circumstance of this visit, that he was exceeding glad of, was, that his brother brought him some of his private writings from New-Jersey, and particularly his diary that he had kept for many years past.]

Lord's day, September 6. I began to read some of my private writings, which my brother brought me; and was considerably refreshed with what I met with in them.

Monday, September 7. I proceeded further in reading my old private writings, and found they had the same effect upon me as before: I could not but rejoice and bless God for what passed long ago, which without writing had been entirely lost.

This evening when I was in great distress of body, my soul longed that God should be glorified: I saw there was no heaven but this. I could not but speak to the by-standers then of the only happiness, viz. pleasing God. Oh that I could ever live to God! The day, I trust, is at hand, the perfect day: Oh; the day of deliverance from all sin.

Lord's day, September 13. I was much refreshed and engaged in meditation and writing, and found a heart to act for God. My spirits were refreshed, and my soul delighted to do something for God.

[On the evening following that Lord's day, his feet began to swell, which thenceforward swelled more and more. A symptom of his dissolution coming on.

The next day his brother left him, being obliged to return to New-Jersey on some business of great importance, intending to return again with all possible speed, hoping to see his brother yet once more in the land of the living.

Mr. Brainerd having now with much deliberation considered the important affair forementioned, left with him by the honourable commissioners in Boston, viz. the recommending two persons proper to be employed

employed as missionaries to the six Nations, he about this time wrote a letter, recommending two young gentlemen of his acquaintance Mr. Elihu Spencer of East-Haddam, and Mr. Job Strong of Northampton. The commissioners on the receipt of this letter, unanimously agreed to accept of the persons he had recommended,

He also this week, wrote a letter to a gentleman in Boston, relating to the growth of the Indian school, and the need of another school-master. The gentlemen, on the receipt of this letter, had a meeting, and agreed with cheerfulness to give 200l. (in bills of the old tenor) for the support of another school-master; and desired the Reverend Mr. Pemberton of New-York, as soon as possible to procure a suitable person for that service; and also agreed to allow 75l. to defray some special charges that were requisite to encourage the mission to the six Nations.

Mr. Brainerd spent himself much in writing those letters, being exceeding weak: but it seemed to be much to his satisfaction, that he had been enabled to do it; hoping that it was something done for God, and which might be for the advancement of Christ's kingdom and glory. In writing the last of these letters, he was obliged to use the hand of another, not being able to write himself.

On the Thursday of this week (September 17.) was the last time that ever he went out of his lodging-room. That day, he was again visited by his brother Israel, who continued with him thenceforward till his death. On that evening he was taken with something of a *diarrhea*; which he looked upon as another sign of his approaching *death*: whereupon he expressed himself thus; "Oh, the glorious time is now coming! I have longed to serve God perfectly: now God will gratify those desires!" And from time to time, at the several new symptoms of his dissolution, he was so far from being damped, that he seemed to be animated; as being glad at the appearances of death's approach. He often used the epithet, *glorious*, when speaking of the day of his *death*, calling it

it *that glorious day*. And as he saw his dissolution gradually approaching, he was much in talking about it, and also settling all his affairs, very particularly and minutely giving directions concerning what he would have done. And the nearer death approached, the more desirous he seemed to be of it. He several times spake of the different kinds of *willingness to die*; and spoke of it as a mean kind of willingness to die, to be willing to leave the body only to get rid of pain.

Saturday, September 19. While I attempted to walk a little, my thoughts turned thus; "How infinitely sweet it is, to love God, and be all for him!" Upon which it was suggested to me, "You are not an angel, lively and active." To which my soul immediately replied, "I as sincerely desire to love and glorify God, as any angel in heaven." Upon which it was suggested again, "But you are filthy, and not fit for heaven." Hereupon instantly appeared the blessed robes of Christ's *righteousness*, which I could not but exult and triumph in; and I viewed the infinite excellency of God, and my soul even broke with longings, that God should be *glorified*. I thought of *dignity in heaven*: but instantly the thought returned, "I do not go to heaven to get honour, but to give all possible glory and praise." Oh, how I longed that God should be glorified on *earth* also! Oh, I was made, for eternity, if God might be glorified! *Bodily pains* I cared not for; though I was then in extremity, I never felt easier; I felt willing to *glorify God* in that state, as long as he pleased. The *grave* appeared really sweet, and I longed to lodge my weary bones in it: but Oh, that God might be *glorified*! this was the burden of all my cry. Oh, I knew, I should be *active* as an angel, in heaven; and that I should be stripped of my *filthy garments*!— But Oh, to *love* and *praise* God more, to *please* him for ever! this my soul panted after, and even now pants for while I write. Oh that *God* might be *glorified* in the whole earth! "Lord, let thy kingdom come." I longed for a spirit of *preaching* to descend

and

and rest on *ministers*, that they might address the consciences of men with closeness and power. I saw, God had the residue of the Spirit;" and my soul longed it should be "poured from on high." I could not but plead with God for my dear congregation, that he would preserve it, and not suffer *his great name* to lose its glory in that work; my soul still longing, that God might be *glorified*.

[In the evening, "his mouth spake out of the abundance of his heart," expressing in a very affecting manner much the same things as are written in his *diary*: and among many other extraordinary expressions, were these; "My heaven is to *please* God, and *glorify* him, and to give all to him, and to be wholly devoted to his glory; that is the heaven I long for; this is my *religion*, and that is my *happiness*, and always was, ever since I had any true religion; and all those that are of *that* religion shall meet me in heaven.—I do not go to heaven to be advanced, but to give honour to God. It is no matter where I shall be stationed in heaven, whether I have a high or a low seat there; but to love, and please, and glorify God is all: had I a *thousand souls*, if they were worth any thing, I would give them all to God; but I have nothing to give, when all is done.—It is impossible for any rational creature to be *happy* without acting all *for* God: God himself could not make him happy any other way.—I long to be in heaven, *praising* and *glorifying* God with the holy angels: all my desire is to glorify God.—My heart goes out to the *burying-place*; it seems to me a *desirable* place: but Oh to *glorify* God! that is it; that is above all.—It is a great comfort to me, to think that I have done a little *for* God in the world: Oh! it is but a *very small* matter; yet I *have* done a *little*; and I lament it, that I have not done *more* for him.—There is nothing in the world worth living for, but *doing good* and *finishing* God's work. I see nothing else in the world, that can yield any satisfaction, besides *living to God*, *pleasing him*, and *doing his whole will*.—My greatest joy and comfort has been, to do

do something for promoting the interest of religion, and the souls of particular persons: and *now*, in my illness, while I am full of pain and distress, from day to day, all the comfort I have, is in being able to do some little *char* (or small piece of work) *for God*; either by something that I say, or writing, or some other way."

He intermingled with these and other like expressions, many pathetic *counsels* to those that were about him; particularly to my children and servants. He applied himself to some of my younger children at this time; calling them to him, and speaking to them one by one; setting before them in a very plain manner, the nature of true piety, and its great Importance; earnestly warning them not to rest in any thing short of that true and thorough change of heart, and a life devoted to God; counselling them not to be slack in the great business of religion, nor in the least to delay it; enforcing his counsels with this, that his words were the words of a *dying man*: said he, "I shall die here, and here shall I be buried, and here you will see my grave, and do you remember what I have said to you. I am going into eternity: and it is sweet to me to think of eternity; the endlessness of it makes it sweet: but Oh, what shall I say to the eternity of the *wicked*! I cannot mention it, nor think of it; the thought is too dreadful. When you see my grave, then remember what I said to you when I was alive; then think with yourself, how that man that lies in that grave, counselled and warned me to prepare for death."

His *body* seemed to be marvellously strengthened, through the inward vigour of his *mind*; so that, although before he was so weak he could hardly utter a sentence, yet now he continued his most affecting discourse for more than an hour, with scarce any intermission; and said of it, when he had done, "it was the last sermon that ever he should preach."

[It appears by what is noted in his *diary*, both of this day and the evening preceding, that his mind was at this time much impressed with a sense of the impor-

imper-

importance of the work of the *ministry*, and the need of the grace of God, and his special assistance in this work: and it also appeared in what he expressed in conversation; particularly in his discourse to his brother Israel, who was then a member of Yale-college at New-Haven, and had been prosecuting his studies there, to that end, that he might be fitted for the work of the ministry, and was now with him. He now, and from time to time, recommended to his brother a life of self-denial, of weanedness from the world, and devotedness to God, and an earnest endeavour to obtain much of the grace of God's Spirit, and God's gracious influences on his heart; representing the great need which ministers stand in of them, and the unspeakable benefit of them from his own experience. Among many other expressions he said, "When ministers feel these gracious influences on their hearts, it wonderfully assists them to come at the consciences of men, and as it were to handle them with hands; whereas, without them, whatever reason and oratory we make use of, we do but make use of stumps instead of hands."]

Monday, September 21. I began to correct a little volume of my private writings: God, I believe, remarkably helped me in it: my strength was surprisingly lengthened out, and my thoughts quick and lively, and my soul refreshed, hoping it might be a work for God. Oh, how good, how sweet it is to labour for God!

Tuesday, September 22. I was again employed in reading and correcting, and had the same success, as the day before. I was exceeding weak; but it seemed to refresh my soul thus to spend time.

Wednesday, September 23. I finished my corrections of the little piece forementioned, and felt uncommonly peaceful: It seemed as if I had now done all my work in this world, and stood ready for my call to a better. As long as I see any thing to be done for God, life is worth having: but Oh, how vain and unworthy it is, to live for any lower end!

Friday,

Friday, September 25. This day I was unspeakably weak, and little better than speechless all the day: however, I was able to write a little, and felt comfortably. Oh, it refreshed my soul, to think of former things, of desires to glorify God, of the pleasures of living to him! "Oh my dear God, I am speedily coming to thee, I hope! hasten the day, O Lord, if it be thy blessed will: Oh come, Lord Jesus, come quickly. Amen."†

September 27. He felt an unusual appetite to food; with which his mind seemed to be *exhilarated*, as a sign of the very near approach of *death*; he said upon it, "I was born on a *Sabbath-day*; and I have reason to think I was new-born on a *Sabbath-day*; and I hope I shall die on this *Sabbath-day*; I shall look upon it as a favour, if it may be the will of God that it should be so: I long for the time. Oh, *why is the chariot so long in coming? why tarry the wheels of his chariots?* I am very willing to part with all: I am willing to part with my dear brother John, and never to see him again, to go to be for ever with the Lord. Oh, when I go there, how will God's dear church on earth be upon my mind!"

Afterwards the same morning, being asked how he did? he answered, "I am almost in eternity: I long to be there. My work is done: I have done with all my friends; all the world is nothing to me. I long to be in heaven, *praising and glorifying God* with the holy *angels*: all my desire is to glorify God."

During the whole of these last two weeks of his life, he seemed to continue loose from all the world, as having done his work, and done with all things here below, having nothing to do but to die, and abiding in an earnest desire and expectation of the happy moment, when his soul should take its flight, and go to a state of perfection, of holiness, and perfect glorifying

W

† This was the last that ever he wrote in his diary with his own hand: though it is continued a little farther, in a broken manner; written by his brother-Israel, but indited by his mouth.

glorifying and enjoying God. He said, " That the consideration of the day of death, and the day of judgment, had a long time been peculiarly sweet to him." He from time to time spake of his being willing to leave the body and the world immediately that moment, if it was the will of God. He also was much in expressing his longings that the church of Christ on earth might flourish, and Christ's kingdom here might be advanced, notwithstanding he was about to leave the *earth*, and should not with his eyes behold the desirable event. He said to me, one morning, " My thoughts have been employed on the old dear theme, *the prosperity of God's church on earth*. As I waked out of sleep, I was led to cry for the pouring out of God's spirit, and the advancement of Christ's kingdom, which the dear Redeemer did, and suffered so much for. It is that especially makes me long for it."

He once told me, that " he had formerly longed for the out-pouring of the Spirit of God, and the glorious times of the church, and hoped they were coming: and should have been willing to have lived to promote religion at that time, if that had been the will of God; but (says he) I am willing it should be as it is: I would not have the choice to make for myself, for ten thousand worlds." He expressed on his death-bed a full persuasion that he should in *heaven* see the prosperity of the church on earth, and should rejoice with Christ therein; and the consideration of it seemed to be highly pleasing to his mind.

He also still dwelt much on the great importance of the work of *ministers*; and expressed his longings, that they might be *filled with the Spirit of God*; and manifested much desire to see some of the neighbouring ministers, whom he had some acquaintance with, that he might converse freely with them on that subject before he died. And it so happened, that he had opportunity with some of them, according to his desire.

Another thing that lay much on his heart, and that he spake of, from time to time, in these near approaches

proaches of death, was the spiritual prosperity of his own congregation : and when he spake of them, it was with peculiar tenderness, so that his speech would be presently interrupted and drowned with tears.

He also expressed much satisfaction in the disposals of providence, with regard to the circumstances of his *death* ; particularly that God had before his death given him the opportunity he had in Boston, with so many considerable persons, ministers, and others, to give in his testimony for God, and against false religion ; and there to lay before charitable gentlemen, the state of the Indians, to so good effect ; and that God had since given him opportunity to write to them further concerning these affairs ; and to write other letters of importance, that he hoped might be of good influence with regard to the state of religion among the Indians, and elsewhere, after his death. He also mentioned it as what he accounted a merciful circumstance of his death, that he should die here. And speaking of these things, he said ; “ God had granted him all his desire ; ” and signified, that now he could with the greater alacrity leave the world.]

Monday, September 28. I was able to read, and make some few corrections in my private writings ; but found I could not write, as I had done ; I found myself sensibly declined in all respects. It has been only from a little while before noon, till about one or two o'clock, that I have been able to do any thing for some time past : yet this refreshed my heart, that I could do any thing, either public or private for God.

[This evening, he was supposed to be dying : he thought so himself, and was thought so by those who were about him. He seemed glad at the appearance of death. He was almost speechless, but his lips appeared to move : and one that sat very near him, heard him utter, “ Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly.—Oh, why is his chariot so long in coming ! ”—After he revived, he blamed himself for having been

too eager to be gone. And in expressing what he found in his mind at that time, he said, he then found an inexpressibly sweet love to those that he looked upon as *belonging to Christ*, beyond all that ever he felt before; so that it "seemed (to use his own words) like a little piece of *heaven* to have one of them near him." And being asked, whether he heard the prayer that was (at his desire) made with him; he said "Yes, he heard every word, and had an uncommon sense of the things that were uttered in that prayer, and that every word reached his heart."

On the evening of Tuesday, September 29, as he lay in his bed, he seemed to be in an extraordinary frame; his mind greatly engaged concerning the prosperity of Zion: there being present at that time two *candidates* for the *ministry*, he desired us all to unite in singing a Psalm on that subject, even Zion's prosperity. And on his desire we sung a part of the 102d Psalm. This seemed much to refresh him, and gave him new strength; so that, though before he could scarce speak at all, now he proceeded, with some freedom of speech, to give his dying counsels to those two young gentlemen, relating to that great work of the *ministry* they were designed for; and in particular, earnestly recommended to them frequent *secret fasting* and *prayer*: and enforced his counsel with regard to this, from his own *experience* of the great comfort and benefit of it; which (said he) I should not mention, were it not that I am a *dying* person. And after he had finished his counsel, he made a prayer, in the audience of us all; wherein, besides praying for this family, for his brethren, and those *candidates* for the *ministry*, and for his own congregation, he earnestly prayed for the reviving and flourishing of religion in the world.

Till now, he had every day sat up part of the day; but after this he never rose from his bed.]

Wednesday, September 30. I was obliged to keep my bed the whole day, through weakness. However I redeemed a little time, and with help of my

my brother, read and corrected about a dozen pages in my M. S. giving an account of my conversion.

Friday, October 2. My soul was this day, at turns, sweetly set on God: I longed to be with him, that I might *behold his glory*: I felt sweetly disposed to commit all to him, even my dearest friends, my dearest flock, and my absent brother, and all my concerns for time and eternity. Oh that his kingdom might come into the world; that they might all love and glorify him; and that the blessed Redeemer might "see of the travail of his soul, and be satisfied! Oh, come, Lord Jesus, come quickly! Amen."†

[The next evening we much expected his brother John from New-Jersey; it being about a week after the time that he proposed for his return. And though our expectations were still disappointed; yet Mr. Bramer seemed to continue unmoved, in the same calm frame, that he had before manifested; as having resigned all to God, and having done with his friends, and with all things here below.

On the morning of the next day, being Lord's day, October 4, as my daughter Jerusha (who chiefly tended him) came into the room, he looked on her very pleasantly, and said; "Dear Jerusha, are you willing to part with me?—I am quite willing to part with you; I am willing to part with all my friends: I am willing to part with my dear brother John, although I love him the best of any creature living; I have committed him and all my friends to God, and can leave them with God. Though, if I thought I should not see you, and be happy with you in another world I could not bear to part with you. But we shall spend an happy eternity together!"\* In the evening, as one came into the room with a Bible in

W. 3

her

† *Here ends his diary: these are the last words, that are written in it, either by his own hand, or from his mouth.*

\* *Since this, it has pleased a holy and sovereign God to take away this my dear child by death; on the 14th of February next following, after a short illness of five days, in the eighteenth year of her age. She was a person of mu-*

her hand, he said, "Oh, that dear book! that lovely book! I shall soon see it opened! the mysteries that are in it, and the mysteries of God's providence, will be all unfolded!"

His distemper now apparently preyed on his vitals: not by a sudden breaking of ulcers in his lungs, as at Boston, but by a constant discharge of putulent matter, in great quantities; so that what he brought up by expectoration, seemed to be as it were mouthfuls of almost clear pus; which was attended with very great inward pain and distress.

On Thursday, October 6, he lay for a considerable time, as if he was dying. At which time, he was heard to utter in broken whispers, such expressions as these; "He will come, he will not tarry.—I shall soon be in glory.—I shall soon glorify God with the angels."—But after some time he revived.

The next day, viz. Wednesday, October 7, his brother John arrived from New-Jersey, where he had

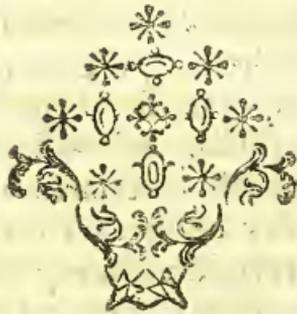
*same spirit with Mr. Brainerd. She had constantly taken care of, and attended him in his sickness, for nineteen weeks before his death, devoting herself to it with great delight, because she looked on him as an eminent servant of Jesus Christ. In this time, he had much conversation with her on things of religion; and in his dying state, often expressed to us, her parents, his great satisfaction concerning her true piety, and his confidence that he should meet her in heaven; and his high opinion of her, not only as a true Christian, but a very eminent saint; one whose soul was uncommonly fed and entertained with things that appertain to the most spiritual parts of religion; and one who, by the temper of her mind, was fitted to deny herself for God, and to do good beyond any young woman that he knew of. She had manifested a heart uncommonly devoted to God, in the course of her life, many years before her death; and said on her death-bed, that "she had not seen one minute for several years, wherein she desired to live one minute longer, for the sake of any other good in life, but doing good, living to God, and doing what might be for his glory."*

had been detained much longer than he intended, by a mortal sickness prevailing among the Christian Indians. Mr. Brainerd was refreshed with seeing him, and appeared fully satisfied with the reasons of his delay; seeing the interest of religion and of the souls of his people required it.

The next day, Thursday, October 8. He told me it was impossible for any one to conceive the distress he felt in his breast. He manifested much concern lest he should dishonour God by impatience. He desired that others would be much in lifting up their hearts to God for him. He signified, that he expected to die that night; but seemed to fear a longer delay: and the disposition of his mind with regard to death appeared still the same that it had been all along. And notwithstanding his bodily agonies, yet the interest of Zion lay still with great weight on his mind; as appeared by some considerable discourse he had that evening with the Rev. Mr. Billing, one of the neighbouring Ministers, concerning the great importance of the work of the ministry. And afterwards, when it was very late in the night; he had much discourse with his brother John, concerning his congregation in New-Jersey, and the interest of religion among the Indians. In the latter Part of the night, his bodily distresses seemed to rise to a greater height than ever; and he said to those then about him, that "it was another thing to die than what people imagined;" explaining himself to mean, that they were not aware what *bodily* pain and anguish is undergone before death. Towards day, his eyes fixed; and he continued lying immoveable, 'till about six o'Clock in the morning, and then expired, on Friday, October 9, 1747. when his soul was received by his dear Lord and Master, as an eminently faithful servant, into a state of perfection of holiness, and fruition of God, which he had so often and so ardently longed for.

Much respect was shewn to his memory at his *funeral*; which was on the Monday following, after

a sermon preached the same day, on that solemn occasion. His funeral was attended by eight of the neighbouring ministers, seventeen other gentlemen of liberal education, and a great concourse of people.]





# L E T T E R S

WRITTEN BY

Mr. *B R A I N E R D.*

To his brother John, then a Student at Yale-College in New-Haven.

*Dear Brother,*

*Kaunaumeeck, April 30, 1743.*

I Should tell you, "I long to see you," but that my own experience has taught me, there is no happiness to be enjoyed in *earthly friends*, though ever so near and dear, or any other enjoyment that is not God himself. Therefore, if the *God of all grace* would be pleased graciously to afford us each his presence and grace, that we may perform the work, and endure the trials he calls us to, in a tiresome wilderness, 'till we arrive at our journey's end; the distance at which we are held from each other at present, is a matter of no great moment. But, alas! the presence of God is what I want.—I live in the most lonely melancholy *desert*, about eighteen miles from Albany. I board with a poor Scotchman: his wife can talk scarce any English. My *diet* consists mostly of hasty-pudding, boiled corn, and bread baked in the ashes. My *lodging* is a little heap of straw, laid upon some boards, a little way from the ground; for it is a log-room, without any floor, that I lodge in. My *work* is exceeding hard: I travel on  
 foot

foot a mile and half, the worst of way, almost daily, and back again; for I live so far from my Indians.— I have not seen an English person this month.— These and many other circumstances, as uncomfortable, attend me; and yet my *spiritual conflicts* and *distresses* so far exceed all these, that I scarce think of them. The Lord grant that I may be enabled to “endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ!” As to my *success* here, I cannot say much: the Indians seem generally well disposed towards me, and are mostly very attentive to my instructions: two or three are under some *convictions*; but there seems to be little of the special workings of the divine Spirit among them yet; which gives me many a heart-sinking hour. Sometimes I hope, God has abundant blessings in store for them and me; but at other times I am so overwhelmed with distress, that I cannot see how his dealings with me are consistent with covenant love and faithfulness, and I say, “Surely his tender mercies are clean gone for ever.” But however, I see, I *needed* all this *chastisement* already: “It is good for me,” that I have endured these trials. Do not be discouraged by my distresses: I was under great distress, at Mr. Pomroy’s, when I saw you last; but “God has been with me of a truth,” since that. But let us always remember, that we must *through much tribulation* enter into God’s eternal kingdom. The righteous are *scarcely* saved: It is an infinite wonder, that we have hopes of being saved at all. For my part, I feel the most vile of any creature living; and I am sure, there is not such another existing on this side *hell*.— Now all you can do for me, is, to pray incessantly, that God would make me humble, holy, resigned, and heavenly minded, by all my trials.— “Be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.” Let us *run, wrestle, and fight*, that we may obtain the *prize*, and obtain that compleat happiness, to be “holy, as God is holy.” So wishing and praying that you may advance in learning and grace, and be fit for special service for God, I remain.

Your affectionate Brother.

DAVID BRAINERD.

To his Brother John, at Yale-college in New-Haven,

Dear Brother,

Kaunaumeeck, Dec. 27, 1743.

I Long to see you, and know how you fare in your journey through the world of sorrow, where we are compassed about with "vanity, confusion, and vexation of spirit." I am more weary of life than ever I was. The whole *world*, appears to me like a vast empty space, whence nothing desirable, or at least satisfactory, can possibly be derived, and I long, *daily* to *die* more and more to it; even though I obtain not that comfort from spiritual things which I earnestly desire. Worldly pleasures, such as flow from greatness, riches, honours, and sensual gratifications, are infinitely *worse* than none. May the Lord deliver us more and more from these *vanities*! I have spent most of the fall and winter in a very weak state of body; and sometimes under pressing inward trials, but "having obtained help from God, I continue to this day;" and am now something better in health. I find nothing more conducive to a life of *Christianity*, than a diligent and faithful improvement of precious *time*. Let us then faithfully perform that business, which is allotted us by divine providence, to the utmost of our bodily strength and mental vigour. Why should we sink with any particular trials, and perplexities, we are called to encounter in the world? *Death* and *eternity* are just before us; a few tossing billows more will waft us to the world of spirits, and we hope (through infinite grace) into endless pleasures. Let us then "run with patience the race that is set before us." And Oh that we could depend more upon the *living God*, and less upon our own wisdom and strength!—Dear brother, may the *God of all grace* comfort your heart, and succeed your studies, and make you an instrument of good to his people. This is the constant prayer of

Your affectionate Brother,

DAVID BRAINERD.

To

To his Brother Israel, at Haddam.

My dear Brother, Kaunaumeek, Jan. 21, 1743-4.

— THERE is but *one* thing, that deserves our highest care; and that is, that we may answer the great *end*, for which we were made, *viz.* to glorify that God, who has given us our beings and all our comforts, and do all the *good* we possibly can to our *fellow-creatures*, while we live in the world: and verily life is not worth the having, if it be not employed for this noble end. Yet; alas, how little is this thought of! Most men love to *live to themselves*, without regard to the glory of God, or the good of their fellow creatures: they earnestly desire, and eagerly pursue the riches, honours, and pleasures of life, as if they really supposed that wealth, or greatness, or merriment, could make their immortal souls happy. But, alas, what false and delusive dreams are these! And how miserable will these ere long be, who are not awaked out of them, to see, that all their happiness consists in *living to God*, and becoming “*holy, as he is holy!*” Oh, may you never fall into the tempers and vanities, the sensuality and folly of the present world! You are left, as it were, alone in a wide world, to act for yourself; be sure then to remember, it is a world of *temptation*. You have no earthly parents to form your youth to piety, by their examples and seasonable counsels; let this excite you with great diligence and fervency to look up to the *Father of mercies* for grace and assistance against all the vanities of the world. And if you would glorify God, answer his just expectations from you, and make your own soul happy in this and the coming world, observe these few *directions*; though not from a father, yet from a brother who is touched with a tender concern for your present and future happiness. And,

First, Resolve upon, and daily endeavour to practise a life of *seriousness*. Think of the life of  
Christ;

Christ; and when you can find that he was pleased with jesting, then you may indulge it in yourself.

Again, Be careful to make a good improvement of precious time. When you cease from labour, fill up your time in reading, meditation, and prayer: and while your hands are labouring, let your heart be employed, as much as possible in divine thoughts.

Further, Take heed that you faithfully perform the *business* you have to do in the world, from a regard to the commands of God. We should always look upon ourselves as God's servants, placed in God's world to do *his* work; and accordingly labour faithfully for *him*; not with a design to grow rich and great, but to glorify God, and do all the good we possibly can.

Again, Never expect *happiness* from the world. If you hope for happiness in the world, hope for it from God, and not *from* the world. Do not think you shall be more happy, if you live to such or such a state of life, if you live to be for yourself, to be settled in the world, or if you should gain an estate in it: but look upon it that you shall then be *happy*, when you can be constantly employed for God, and not for yourself; and desire to live in this world, only to *do* and *suffer* what God allots to you. When you can be of the spirit and temper of angels, who are willing to come down into this lower world, to perform what God commands them, though their desires are *heavenly*, and not in the least set on *earthly* things, then you will be of that temper that you ought to have.

Once more, Never think that you can live to God by *your own* strength; but always look to, and rely on *him* for assistance, yea, for all strength and grace. There is no greater *truth* than this, that "we can do nothing of ourselves;" yet nothing but our own *experience* can effectually teach it to us. Indeed we are a long time in learning, that all our strength and salvation is in God. This is a life; that no *unconverted* man can live; yet it is a life that every *godly* soul

is pressing after. Let it then be your great concern to devote yourself and your all to God.

I long to see you, that I may say much more to you than I now can, but I desire to commit you to the *Father of mercies*, and *God of all grace*; praying that you may be directed safely through an *evil world*, to *God's heavenly kingdom*.

*I am your affectionate loving brother,*

DAVID BRAINERD.

### To a special Friend.

*The Forks of Delaware, July 31, 1744.*

— **C**ertainly the greatest, the noblest pleasure of intelligent creatures must result from their acquaintance with the blessed God, and with their own immortal souls. And Oh, how divinely sweet is it, to look into our own souls, when we can find all our passions united and engaged in pursuit after God, our whole souls passionately breathing after a conformity to him, and the full enjoyment of him! Verily there are no hours pass away with so much pleasure, as those that are spent in communing with God and our own hearts. Oh, how sweet is a spirit of devotion, a spirit of seriousness and divine solemnity, a spirit of gospel simplicity, love, tenderness! Oh, how desirable, and how profitable to the Christian life, is a spirit of holy watchfulness, and godly jealousy over ourselves; when ourselves are afraid of nothing so much as that we shall grieve and offend the blessed God, whom we apprehend, to be a *father and a friend*; whom we then love and long to please! Surely this is a temper, worthy of the highest ambition and closest pursuit of intelligent creatures. Oh, how vastly superior is the peace, and satisfaction derived from these divine frames, to that which we sometimes pursue in things impertinent and trifling! our own bitter experience teaches us, that “in the midst of such laughter the heart is sorrowful,” and there is no true satisfaction at in God. But, alas! how shall we obtain and retain

tain this sweet spirit of religion? Let us follow the apostle's direction, Phil. ii. 12, and labour upon the encouragement he there mentions, for it is God only can afford us this favour; and he will be *sought*, and it is fit we should wait upon him for so rich a mercy. Oh, may the God of all grace afford us the influences of his Spirit: and help us that we may from our hearts esteem it our greatest liberty and happiness, that "whether we live, we may live to the Lord, or whether we die, we may die to the Lord;" that in *life* and *death*, we may be his!

I am in a very poor state of health: but through divine goodness, I am not discontented: I bless God for this retirement: I never was more thankful for any thing, than I have been of late for the necessity I am under of self-denial: I love to be a *pilgrim* and *stranger* in this wilderness: it seems most fit for such a poor ignorant, worthless creature as I. I would not change my present *mission* for any other business in the whole world. I may tell you freely, God has of late given me great freedom and fervency in prayer when I have been so weak and feeble, my nature seemed as if it would speedily dissolve. I feel as if my *all* was lost, and I was undone, if the poor Heathen be not converted. I feel different from what I did when I saw you last, more *crucified* to all the enjoyments of life. It would be very refreshing to me, to see you here in this desert; especially in my weak disconsolate hours: but, I could be content never to see you, or any of my friends again in this world, if God would bless my labours to the conversion of the poor Indians.

I have much that I could willingly communicate to you, which I must omit, till providence gives us leave to see each other. In the mean time, I rest.

Your obliged friend and servant,

DAVID BRAINERD.

To his Brother John, at College.

*Crosweckfung, in New-Jersey, Dec. 28, 1745.*

*Very Dear Brother,*

— I Am in one continued and uninterrupted hurry; and divine providence throws so much upon me, that I do not see it will ever be otherwise. May I “obtain mercy of God to be faithful to the death!” I cannot say, I am weary of my hurry; I only want strength and grace to do more for God.

My dear brother, *The Lord of heaven*, that has carried me through many trials, *blefs you*; blefs you for time and eternity; and fit you to do service for him in his church below, and to enjoy his blisful presence in his church triumphant. My brother; “the time is short:” Oh let us fill it up for God; let us “count the sufferings of this present time” as nothing, if we can but “finish our course with joy.” Oh, let us strive to live to God. I blefs the Lord, I have nothing to do with *earth*, but only to labour honestly in it for God, till I shall “accomplish as an hireling my day.” I do not desire to live one minute for any thing that *earth* can afford. Oh, that I could live for none but God, till my dying moment!

*I am your affectionate brother,*

DAVID BRAINERD.

To his Brother Israel, at College, written a few Months before his Death.

*My dear brother,*

*Boston, June 30, 1747.*

IT is from the sides of *eternity* I now address you. I am heartily sorry, that I have so little strength to write what I long to communicate to you. But let me tell you, my brother, *eternity* is another thing than we ordinarily take it to be. Oh, how vast and boundless! Oh, how fixed and unalterable! Oh, of what infinite importance is it, that we be prepared for *eternity*! I have been just dying for more than a week; and all around me have thought so: but in this time I have had clear views of *eternity*:  
have

have seen the blessedness of the *godly*; and have longed to share their happy state; as well as been comfortably satisfied, that I shall do so; but Oh, what anguish is raised in my mind, to think of an *eternity* for those who are *Christless*, for those who bring their false hopes to the grave with them! The sight was so dreadful, I could by no means bear it: my thoughts recoiled, and I said, "Who can dwell with everlasting burnings!" Oh, methought, that I could now see my friends, that I might warn them, to see to it, they lay their foundation for *eternity* sure. And you, my dear brother, I have been particularly concerned for; and have wondered I so much neglected conversing with you about your spiritual state at our last meeting. Oh, let me beseech you now to examine, whether you are indeed a *new creature*? Whether the *glory* of God has ever been the highest concern with you? whether you have ever been reconciled to all the perfections of God? In a word, whether God has been your portion, and a holy conformity to him your chief delight? If you have reason to think you are *graceless*, Oh give yourself and the throne of grace no rest, till God arise and save. But if the case should be otherwise, bless God for his grace, and press after holiness:

Oh, my dear brother, flee *fleshly lusts*, and the inchanting *amusements*, as well as corrupt *doctrines* of the present day; and strive to *live to God*. Take this as the last line from

Your affectionate dying brother,

DAVID BRAINERD.

To a young Gentleman, a *Candidate* for the *Ministry*,  
written at the same Time.

Very Dear Sir,

HOW amazing it is, that the *living* who *know* they *must die*, should notwithstanding "put far away the evil day," in a season of health and prosperity: and live at such an awful distance from the grave, and the great concerns beyond it! And especially

cially, that any whose minds have been divinely enlightened, to behold the important things of *eternity* should live in this manner. And yet, Sir, how frequently is this the case? How rare are the instances of those who live and act, from day to day, as on the verge of *eternity*; striving to fill up all their remaining moments, in the service, and to the honour of their great *Master*? We insensibly trifle away time, while we seem to have enough of it; and are so strangely amused, as in a great measure to lose a sense of the holiness, necessary to prepare us to be inhabitants of the heavenly *paradise*. But, Oh, dear Sir, a *dying bed*, if we enjoy our reason will give another view of things. I have now, for more than three weeks, lain under the greatest weakness; the greater part of the time, expecting daily and hourly to enter into the eternal world: sometimes have been so far gone, as to be speechless for some hours together. And Oh, of what vast importance has a holy spiritual life appeared to me to be in this season! I have longed to call upon all my friends, to make it their business to *live to God*; and especially all that are designed for, or engaged in the service of the sanctuary. O dear Sir, do not think it enough, to live at the rate of *common Christians*. Alas, to how little purpose do they often converse, when they meet together! The visits, even of those who are called Christians indeed, are frequently quite barren; and conscience cannot but condemn us for the misemployment of time, while we have been conversant with them. But the way to enjoy the divine presence, and be fitted for his service, is to live a life of *great devotion* and *constant self-dedication* to him; observing the motions and dispositions of our own hearts, whence we may learn the corruptions that lodge there, and our constant need of help from God for the performance of the least duty. And Oh, dear Sir, let me beseech you frequently to attend the great and precious duties of *secret fasting* and *prayer*.

I have a secret thought from some things I have observed, that God may perhaps design you for some  
singular

singular service in the world. Oh then labour to be prepared and qualified to do much for God. Suffer me to intreat you earnestly to “ give yourself to prayer, to reading and meditation” on divine truths : strive to penetrate to the bottom of them, and never be content with a superficial knowledge. By this means, your thoughts will grow weighty and judicious ; and you thereby will be possessed of a valuable treasure, out of which you may produce “ things new and old,” to the glory of God.

And now, “ I commend you to the grace of God ;” earnestly desiring, that a plentiful portion of the divine Spirit may rest upon you ; that you may *live to God* in every capacity, and do abundant for him in public, if it be his will ; and that you may be richly qualified for the “ inheritance of the saints in light.”

I scarce expect to see your face any more in the body ; and therefore intreat you to accept this as the last token of love, from

*Your sincerely affectionate dying friend,*

DAVID BRAINERD.

To his Brother John, at Bethel, the Town of Christian Indians in New-Jersey, written at Boston, before his death.

*Dear Brother,*

I AM now just on the verge of *eternity*, expecting very speedily to appear in the unseen world. I feel myself no more an inhabitant on earth, and sometimes earnestly long to “ depart and be with Christ.” I bless God, he has for some years given me an abiding conviction, that it is impossible for any rational creature to enjoy true happiness without being entirely “ devoted to him.” Under the influence of this conviction I have in some measure acted : Oh that I had done more so ! I saw both the excellency and necessity of holiness ; but never in such a manner as now, when I am just brought to the sides of the grave. Oh, my brother, pursue after holiness : press towards the blessed mark ; and let your thirsty soul continually

continually say, " I shall never be satisfied till I awake in thy likeness."

And now, my dear brother, as I must press you to pursue after *personal* holiness, to be as much in *fasting* and *prayer* as your health will allow, and to live above the rate of *common Christians*: so I must intreat you to attend to your public work; labour to distinguish between true and false religion; and to that end, watch the motions of God's Spirit upon your own heart; look to him for help, and impartially compare your experiences with his word.

Charge my people in the name of their *dying minister*, yea, in the name of *him who was dead and is alive*, to live and walk as becomes the gospel. Tell them, how great the expectations of God and his people are from them, and how awfully they will wound God's cause, if they fall into vice: as well as fatally prejudice other poor Indians. Always insist, that their joys are *delusive*, although they may have been rapt up into the *third heavens*, unless the main tenour of their *lives* be spiritual, watchful and holy. In pressing these things, " thou shalt both save thyself, and those that hear thee."—

God knows, I was heartily willing to have served him longer in the work of the ministry, although it had still been attended with all the *labours* and *hardships* of past years, if he had seen fit that it should be so: but as his will now appears otherwise, I am fully content, and can with the utmost freedom say, " The will of the Lord be done." It affects me, to think of leaving you in a world of sin: my heart pities you, that those storms and tempests are yet before you, which through grace I am almost delivered from. But " God lives, and blessed be my Rock:" he is the same Almighty friend; and will, I trust, be your guide and helper, as he has been mine.

And now, my dear brother, " I commend you to God and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and give you inheritance among all  
them

them that are sanctified." May you enjoy the divine presence, both in private and public; and may "the arms of your hands be made strong, by the right hand of the mighty God of Jacob!" Which are the passionate desires and prayers of

*Your affectionate dying brother,*

DAVID BRAINERD.



SOME



S O M E

# Reflections *and* Observations

O N T H E

Preceding MEMOIRS. of Mr. BRAINERD.

I. **W**E have here an opportunity, in a very lively *instance*, to see the *nature* of true religion; and the *manner* of its *operation* when exemplified in a high degree and powerful exercise. Particularly it may be observed.

1. How greatly Mr. Brainerd's religion differed from that of some pretenders to saving *conversion*; who depending on that, settle in a cold, careless, and carnal frame of mind, and in a neglect of the thorough earnest religion. Although his convictions and conversion were in all respects exceeding clear, yet how far was he from acting as though he thought he had *got through his work*, when once he had obtained comfort and satisfaction of his interest in Christ? On the contrary, that work on his heart, by which he was brought to this, was with him but the beginning of his work, his first entering on the great business of religion, his first setting out in his race. His obtaining rest in Christ, after earnest striving to enter in at the strait gate, he did not look upon as putting an end to any further occasion for striving and violence in religion: but these were continued, and maintained constantly, through all changes, to the very end of life. He continued pressing forward,

ward, forgetting the things that were behind, and reaching forth towards the things that were before. His pains and earnestness in religion were rather increased than diminished, after he had received satisfaction concerning the safety of his state. Those divine principles, love to God, and longings after holiness, was more effectual to engage him to pains and activity in religion, than fear of hell had been before.

And as his conversion was not the end of his work, or of his diligence and strivings in religion; so neither was it the end of the *work of the Spirit of God* on his heart: but on the contrary, the beginning of that work; the first dawning of the light, which thenceforward increased more and more; the beginning of his holy affections, his sorrow for sin, his love to God, his rejoicing in Christ, his longings after holiness. And the powerful operations of the Spirit of God herein, were carried on, from the day of his conversion, to his dying day. His religious experiences, his admiration, joy, and praise, did not only hold for a few days, weeks, or months, while hope and comfort were new things with him; and then gradually die away, till they came to leave him without any sensible experience or holy and divine affections, for months together; as it is with many, who after the newness of things is over, soon come to that pass, that it is again with them much as it is used to be before their supposed conversion, with respect to any present views of God's glory, or ardent outgoings of their souls after divine objects; but only now and then they have a comfortable reflection on times past; and so rest easy, thinking all well; they have had a good clear work, and they doubt not but they shall go to heaven when they die. How far otherwise was it with Mr. Brainerd, than it is with such persons! His experiences, instead of dying away, were evidently of an increasing nature. His first love, and other holy affections, even at the beginning were very great; but after months and years, became much greater, and more remarkable; and  
the

the spiritual exercises of his mind continued exceeding great, (though not equally so at all times, without remissness, and without dwindling and dying away, even till his decease. They began in a time of general deadness, and were greatly increased in a time of general reviving of religion. And when religion decayed again, and a general deadness returned, his experiences were still kept up in their height, and so continued to be, in a general course wherever he was, in sickness and in health, living and dying. The change that was wrought in him at his conversion, was agreeable to scripture-representations, a great change, and an abiding change, rendering him a new man, a new creature: not only a change as to hope and comfort; and a transient change, consisting in passing affections; but a change of *nature*, a change of the abiding habit and temper of his mind. Nor a partial change, merely in point of opinion, or outward reformation, much less a change from one error to another, or from one sin to another: but an universal change, both internal, and external, from the habits and ways of sin, universal holiness.

It appears plainly, from his conversion to his death, that the great object of the new sense of his mind, the new appetites given him in his conversion, and thenceforward maintained and increased in his heart, was HOLINESS, conformity to God, living to God, and glorifying him. This was what drew his heart; this was the centre of his soul; this was the ocean to which all the streams of his religious affections tended: this was the object that engaged his eager desires and earnest pursuits: he knew no true excellency or happiness, but this: this was what he longed for most vehemently and constantly on *earth*; and this was with him the beauty and blessedness of heaven, to be perfectly holy, and perfectly exercised in the holy employments of heaven; to glorify God, and enjoy him for ever.

His religious affections were attended with *evangelical humiliation*; consisting in a sense of his own insufficiency, despicableness, and odiousness. How deeply

deeply affected was he almost continually with his great defects in religion; with his vast distance from that spirituality that became him; with his ignorance, pride, deadness, unsteadiness, barrenness? He was not only affected with the remembrance of his former sinfulness, but with the sense of his present vileness and pollution. He was not only disposed to think meanly of himself as *before God*, and in comparison of him; but amongst men, and compared with them. He was apt to think other saints better than he; yea, to look upon himself as the meanest and least of saints; yea, very often as the vilest and worst of mankind. And notwithstanding his great attainments in spiritual knowledge, yet we find there is scarce any thing he is more frequently abased with, than his ignorance.

How eminently did he appear to be of a *meek* and *quiet* spirit, resembling the lamb-like, dove-like Spirit of Christ! how full of love, meekness, quietness, forgiveness, and mercy! His love was not merely fondness for a party, but an universal benevolence; often exercised in the most sensible and ardent love to his greatest opposers and enemies. His love and meekness were not outward passion and shew; but they were effectual things, manifest in expensive and painful deeds of love and kindness; readily confessing faults under the greatest trials, and humbling himself even at the feet of those from whom he had suffered most: and from time to time praying for his enemies, abhorring the thoughts of bitterness and resentment towards them. I scarce know where to look for a parallel instance of self-denial, in these respects, in the present age. He was a person of great zeal; but how did he abhor a bitter zeal, and lament it where he saw it! and though he was once drawn into some degrees of it, by the force of example; yet how did he go about with a heart bruised and broken in pieces for it all his life after!

Of how *soft* and *tender* a spirit was he! How far were his experiences, hopes, and joys, from a tendency to lessen conviction and tenderness of consci-

ence, to cause him to be less affected with present and past sins, and less conscientious with respect to future sins, more easy in the neglect of duties that are troublesome and inconvenient, less apt to be alarmed at his own defects and transgressions, more easily induced to a compliance with carnal appetites! On the contrary, how tender was his conscience! how apt was his heart to smite him! how greatly was he alarmed at the appearance of evil! how great and constant was his jealousy over his own heart! how strict his care and watchfulness against sin! how deep and sensible were the wounds that sin made in his conscience! those evils that are generally accounted small, were almost an insupportable burden to him; such as his inward deficiencies, his having no more love to God, finding within himself any slackness or dulness, any unsteadiness, or wandering frame of mind, how did the consideration of such things as these abase him, and fill him with shame and confusion! His love and hope, though they were such as cast out a servile fear of hell, yet were attended with, and promoted a reverential filial fear of God, a dread of sin, and of God's holy displeasure. His joy seemed truly to be rejoicing with trembling. His assurance and comfort promoted and maintained mourning for sin: holy mourning with him, was not only the work of an hour or a day, at his first conversion; but he was a mourner for sin all his days. He did not, after he received satisfaction of the forgiveness of his sins, forget his past sins, that were committed before his conversion; but the remembrance of them from time to time, revived his heart with renewed grief: And how lastingly did the sins committed after his conversion, affect and break his heart! if he did any thing whereby he thought he had in any respect dishonoured God, he had never done with calling it to mind with sorrow: though he was assured that God had forgiven it, yet he never forgave himself. And his present sins, that he daily found in himself, were an occasion of daily sorrow of heart.

His

His religion was not like a blazing meteor, flying through the firmament with a bright train, and then quickly going out; but like the steady lights of heaven, that are constant principles of light, though sometimes hid with clouds. Nor like a land-flood, which flows far and wide, with a rapid stream, bearing down all afore it, and then dried up; but like a stream fed by living springs; which though sometimes increased and at other times diminished, yet is a *constant stream*.

Mr. Brainerd's comforts were not like those of some other persons, which are attended with a spiritual satiety, and put an end to their religious desires and longings, at least to the ardency of them; resting satisfied, as having obtained their chief end, which is to extinguish their fears of hell. On the contrary, how were they always attended with longings and thirstings after greater degrees of conformity to God! And the greater and sweeter his comforts were, the more vehement were his desires after holiness. For his longings were not so much after joyful discoveries of God's love; as after greater spirituality, an heart more engaged for God, to love, and exalt, and depend upon him; an ability better to serve him, to do more for his glory. And his desires were powerful and effectual, to animate him to the earnest, eager pursuit of these Things. His comforts never put an end to his seeking after God, but greatly engaged and enlarged him therein.

His religion did not consist only in *experience*, without *practice*. All his comforts had a direct tendency to practice; and this, not merely a practice *negatively* good, but a practice *positively* holy and Christian, in a serious, devout, humble, meek, merciful, charitable, and beneficent conversation; making the service of God, and our Lord Jesus Christ, the great business of life which he pursued with the greatest earnestness and diligence to the end of his days.

III. The foregoing account may afford matter of conviction, that there is indeed such a thing as true

*experimental religion*, arising from immediate divine influences, supernaturally enlightening and convincing the mind, and powerfully quickening, sanctifying, and governing the heart; which religion is indeed an amiable thing, of happy tendency, and of no hurtful consequence to human society; notwithstanding there have been many pretences to experimental religion, that have proved to be nothing but *enthusiasm*.

If any insist, that Mr. Brainerd's religion was *enthusiasm*, I would ask, if such things as these are the fruits of enthusiasm, *viz.* honesty and simplicity, sincere and earnest desires and endeavours, to know and do whatever is right, and to avoid every thing that is wrong; an high degree of love to God, placing the happiness of life in him; not only in contemplating him, but in being active in pleasing, and serving him; a firm and undoubting belief in the Messiah, as the Saviour of the world; together with great love to him, delight and complacence in the way of salvation by him, and longing for the enlargement of his kingdom; uncommon resignation to the will of God, and that under vast trials; universal benevolence to mankind, reaching all sorts of persons without distinction, manifested in sweetness of speech and behaviour, kind treatment, mercy, liberality, and earnest seeking the good of the souls and bodies of men; attended with extraordinary humility, meekness, forgiveness of injuries, and love to enemies; a modest, discreet, and decent deportment, among superiors, inferiors, and equals; a diligent improvement of time, and earnest care to lose no part of it; great watchfulness against all sorts of sin, of heart, speech, and action: and the foregoing amiable virtues all ending in a marvellous peace, unmoveable calmness, and resignation, in the sensible approaches of death: I say, if all these things are the fruits of *enthusiasm*, why should not enthusiasm be thought a desirable and excellent thing?

And whereas there are many who are not professed opposers of what is called *experimental religion*, who yet

yet doubt of the reality of it, from the *bad lives* of some professors; and are ready to determine that there is nothing in all the talk about being *born again*, *brought to Christ*, &c. because many that pretend to these things, manifest no abiding alteration in their disposition and behaviour; are as careless, carnal, or covetous as ever; yea, some much worse than ever: it is acknowledged, that this is the case with some; but by the preceding account they may see it is not so with all. There are some indisputable instances of such a change. a “renovation of the spirit of the mind,” and a “walking in newness of life.” In the foregoing instance particularly, they may see the abiding influence of such a work of conversion; the fruits of such experience through a course of years; under a great variety of circumstances and the blessed event of it in life and death.

IV. Is there not much in the preceding memoirs to teach, and excite to duty, us who are called to the work of the *ministry*? What a deep sense had he of the greatness and importance of that work, and with what weight did it lie on his mind! how sensible was he of his own insufficiency for this work; and how great was his dependance on God’s sufficiency! how solicitous, that he might be fitted for it! and to this end, how much time did he spend in prayer and fasting, as well as reading and meditation; *giving himself to these things!* how did he dedicate his whole life, all his powers and talents to God; and forsake and renounce the world, with all its pleasing and ensnaring enjoyments, that he might be wholly at liberty, to serve Christ in this work; and to “please him who had chosen him to be a soldier, under the Captain of our salvation!” With what solicitude, solemnity, and diligence did he devote himself to God our Saviour, and seek his presence and blessing, at the time of his *ordination!* and how did his whole heart appear to be constantly engaged, his whole time employed, and his whole strength spent in the business he then undertook!—And his history shews us the right way to *success* in the work.

of the ministry. He fought it as a resolute soldier seeks victory, in a siege or battle; or as a man that runs a race for a prize. Animated with love to Christ and souls, how did he “labour always fervently,” not only in word and doctrine, in public and private, but in *prayers* day and night, “wrestling with God” in secret, and “travailing in birth,” with unutterable groans and agonies, “until Christ were formed” in the hearts of the people to whom he was sent! How did he thirst for a blessing on his ministry; and “watch for souls as one that must give account!” How did he “go forth in the strength of the Lord God;” depending on a special influence of the *Spirit* to assist him! and what was the happy fruit at last, though after long waiting, and many discouraging appearances! Like a true son of Jacob, he persevered in wrestling, until the breaking of the day.

V. The foregoing account may afford instruction to *Christians in general*; as it shews, in many respects, the right way of *practising* religion, in order to obtaining the ends of it; or how Christians should “run the race set before them,” if they would not “run as uncertainly,” but would honour God in the world, adorn their profession, be serviceable to mankind, have the comforts of religion while they live, be free from disquieting doubts; enjoy peace in the approach of death, and “finish their course with joy.”—In general, he much recommended, for this purpose, the *redemption of time*, and great *diligence in watchfulness*.

And his example and success with regard to one duty in special, may be of great use to both ministers and private Christians: I mean the duty of secret fasting. The reader has seen how much Mr. Brainerd recommends this duty, how frequently he exercised himself in it; and how much he was owned and blessed in it, and of what great benefit it evidently was to his soul. Among all the days he spent in secret fasting and prayer, there is scarce an instance of one, but what was attended with apparent

rent success, and a remarkable blessing, in special incomes and consolations of God's spirit.—But it must be observed, that when he set about this duty, he did it in good earnest; “stirring up himself to take hold of God,” and “continuing instant in prayer,” with much of the spirit of Jacob, who said to the angel. “I will not let thee go, except thou blest me.”

VI. One thing more may be observed in the preceding account of Mr. Brainerd; and that is, the remarkable disposal of divine providence, with respect to the circumstances of his last sickness and death.

Though he had been long infirm, his constitution being much broken by his fatigues and hardships; and though he was often brought very low by illness, yet his life was preserved, 'till he had seen that which he had so long and greatly desired, a glorious work of grace among the Indians.

And though it was the pleasure of God, that he should be taken off from his labours among that people, who were so dear to him; yet this was not before they were well instructed in the christian religion, confirmed and fixed in the Christian faith and manners, formed into a church; brought into a good way with respect to the education of children; collected in a town by themselves, on a good piece of land of their own; and introduced into the way of living by husbandry. These things were but just brought to pass by his indefatigable application, and then he was taken off from his work. If this had been but a little sooner, they would by no means have been prepared for such a dispensation; and it probably would have been more to their spiritual interest, and of the cause of Christianity among them.

The time and circumstances of his illness were so ordered, that he had just opportunity to finish his Journal. A foundation was hereby laid for a concern in others for that cause, and proper care and measures to be taken for the maintaining it after his death. As it has actually proved to be of great benefit

nefit in this refpect; it having excited many in thofe parts, and alfo more diftant parts of America, to exert themfelves for the promoting fo glorious a work, remarkably opening their hearts and hands: and not only in America, but in Great Britain, where that Journal has been an occafion of fome large benefactions, made for the promoting the intereft of Chriftianity among the Indians.

He was not taken off from the work of the miniftry among his people, 'till his *brother* was in a capacity and circumftances to *fucceed* him in his care of them: who fucceeds him in the like fpirit, and under whofe prudent and faithful care his congregation has flourifhed, and been very happy, fince he left them; and probably could not have been fo well provided for otherwife. If Mr. Brainerd had been difabled fooner, his *brother* would by no means have been ready to ftand up in his place; having taken his firft degrees at college but about that very time that he was feized with this very fatal confumption.

Though in that winter that he lay fick at Mr. Dinkinfon's in Elifabeth-Town, he continued for a long time in an extremely low ftate, fo that his life was almoft defpaired of, and his ftate was fometimes fuch that it was hardly expected he would live a day to an end; yet his life was fpared awhile longer; he lived to fee his brother arrived in New-Jerfey, being come to fucceed him in the care of his Indians; and he himfelf had opportunity to affift in his examination and introduction into his bufinefs: and to commit the conduct of his dear people to one whom he well knew, and could put confidence in, and ufe freedom with in giving him particular inftructions and charges, and under whofe care he could leave his congregation with great chearfulnefs.

The providence of God was remarkable in fo ordering of it, that before his death he fhould take a journey into New-England, and go to Boston; which was, in many refpects, of very great and happy confequences to the intereft of religion, and efpecially among his own people. By this means, as has  
been.

been observed, he was brought into acquaintance with many persons of note and influence, ministers, and others, belonging both to the town and various parts of the country; and had opportunity under the best advantages, to bear a testimony for God and true religion.

The providence of God was observable in his going to Boston at a time when not only the honourable commissioners were seeking missionaries to the Six Nations, but just after his Journal, which gives an account of his labours and success among the Indians, had been spread at Boston; whereby his name was known, and the minds of serious people were well prepared to receive his person, and the testimony he there gave for God; to exert themselves for the upholding and promoting the interest of religion in his congregation, and amongst the Indians elsewhere; and to regard his judgment concerning the qualifications of missionaries. If he had gone there the fall before, (when he had intended to have made his journey into New-England, but was prevented by a sudden great increase of his illness) it would not have been likely to have been to so good effect; and also if he had not been unexpectedly detained in Boston; for when he went from my house, he intended to make but a very short stay there; but divine providence by his being brought so low there, detained him long; thereby to make way for the fulfilling its own gracious designs.

Thus, although it was the pleasure of God, that he should be taken away from his congregation; yet it was granted to him, that before he died he should see them well provided for every way: he saw them provided for with one to instruct them, and take care of their souls; his own brother, whom he could confide in: he saw a good foundation laid for the support of the school among them; those things that before were wanting in order to its being supplied; and he had also opportunity to leave all his dying charges with his successor in the pastoral care of his people,

people, and by him to send his dying counsels to them.

Another thing, wherein appears the merciful disposal of providence, was, that he did not die in the wilderness, among the savages, at Kaunaameek, or the Forks of Delaware, or at Susquahannah : but in a place where his dying behaviour might be observed, and some account given for the benefit of survivors : and also where care might be taken of him in his sickness, and proper honours done him at his death.

I would not conclude my observations on the merciful circumstances of Mr. Brainerd's death, without acknowledging with thankfulness, the gracious dispensation of providence to me and my family in so ordering, that he (though the ordinary place of his abode was more than two hundred miles distant) should be cast hither to my house, in his last sickness, and should die here : so that we had opportunity for much acquaintance and conversation with him, and to shew him kindness in such circumstances, and to see his dying behaviour, to hear his dying speeches, to receive his dying counsels, and to have the benefit of his dying prayers. May God in infinite mercy grant, that we may ever retain a proper remembrance of these things, and make a due improvement of the advantages we have had ! The Lord grant also, that the foregoing account may be for the spiritual benefit of all that read it, and prove a happy means of promoting true religion in the world ! Amen.

F I N I S.

